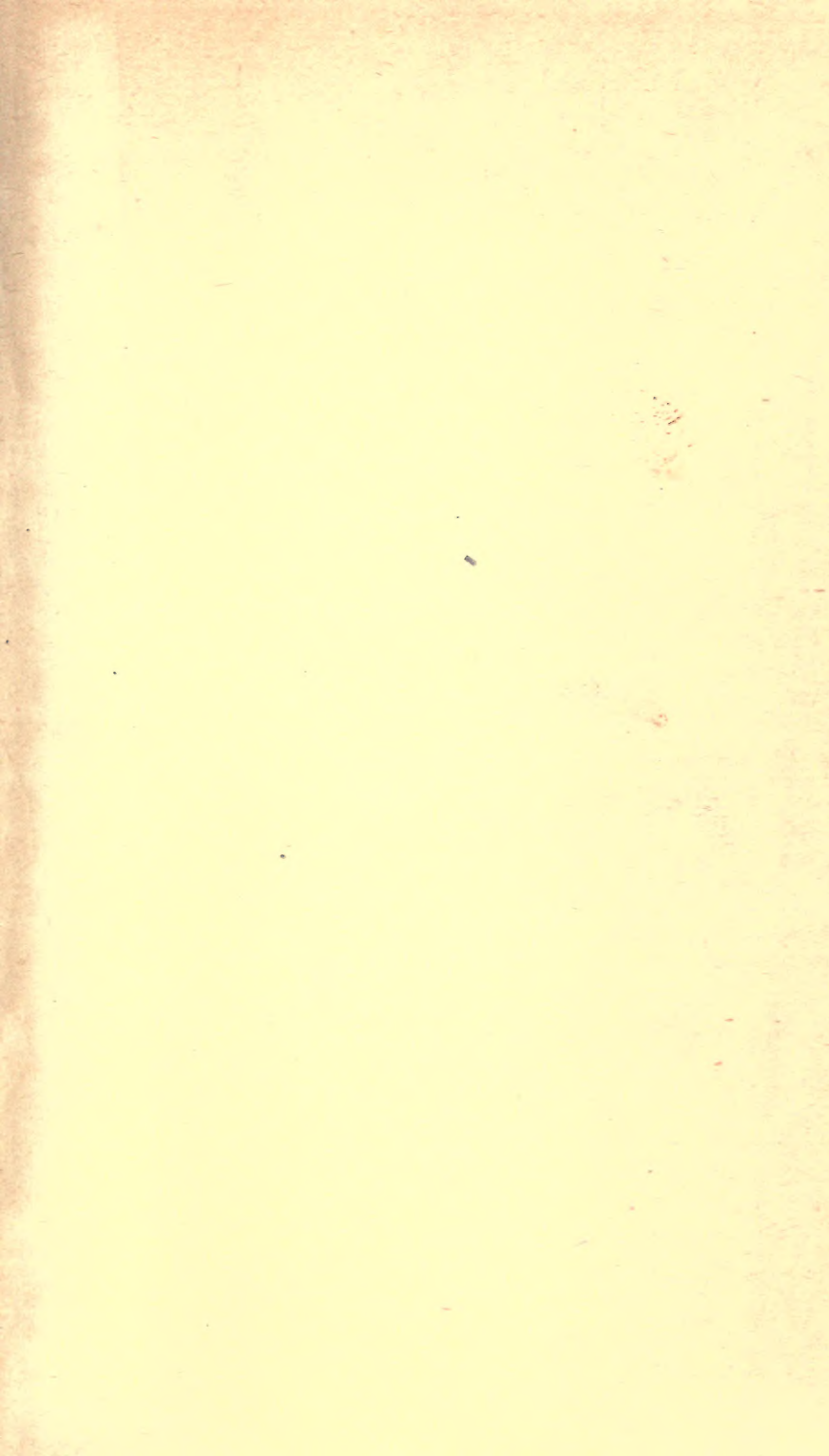


FORTY YEARS IN BRAZIL

FRANK BENNETT



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation



FORTY YEARS IN BRAZIL

A SELECTION FROM
MILLS AND BOON'S
 LATEST GENERAL LITERATURE

IN CHEYNE WALK AND THEREABOUT. Containing short accounts of some ingenious people and famous places that were by the riverside at Chelsea. By REGINALD BLUNT, Author of "Paradise Row." Illustrated. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.

MARGHERITA OF SAVOY. By MADAME ZAMPINI. With a Preface by RICHARD BAGOT. Illustrated. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.

A HERO OF BRITTANY. Armand de Chateau Briand. By E. HERPIN. Translated by MRS. COLQUHOUN GRANT. Illustrated. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.

EIGHT YEARS IN GERMANY. By I. A. R. WYLIE, Author of "My German Year." Illustrated. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.

FORTY YEARS IN BRAZIL. By FRANK BENNETT. With 24 illustrations. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.

MY COSMOPOLITAN YEAR. By the Author of "Mastering Flame" and "Ashes of Incense." With 19 illustrations. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.

TWO YEARS WITH THE NATIVES IN THE WESTERN PACIFIC. By DR. FELIX SPEISER. With 40 illustrations and a map. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.

A MOTOR TOUR IN BELGIUM AND GERMANY. By TOM R. XENIER. With 39 illustrations and a map. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.

ROMAN MEMORIES IN THE LANDSCAPE SEEN FROM CAPRI. Narrated by THOMAS SPENCER JEROME. Illustrated by MORGAN HEISKELL. With 3 maps. Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.

RAMBLES IN ROME. By G. E. TROUTBECK, Author of "Rambles in Florence." With 8 illustrations in colour by ROSE McANDREW, and 33 from photographs. Crown 8vo. 6s.

THE ROMANCE OF THE CAMBRIDGE COLLEGES. By FRANCIS GRIBBLE. With 16 illustrations. Crown 8vo. 6s.

LETTERS TO CHILDREN ABOUT DRAWING, PAINTING AND SOMETHING MORE. By JOHN MEADE. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d. net.

THE POCKET ASQUITH. By E. E. MORTON. Fcap. 8vo. Cloth, 2s. net. Paper Covers, 1s. net.



AUTHOR'S HOME.

B4714f

FORTY YEARS IN BRAZIL

By
FRANK BENNETT

ILLUSTRATED

MILLS & BOON, LIMITED
49, RUPERT STREET
LONDON, W.

149 279
31 | 3 | 19

Published 1914.

Preface

IN preparing this little book on Brazil, I have been actuated chiefly by the desire to help to make known a country which is still, so to speak, *terra incognita* to Europeans generally, and one which I venture to say will repay them to make a closer study of.

It is not possible, in a work of so cursory and slight a character, to do more than lightly touch upon the many points of varied interest which a country such as Brazil offers to the minds of thoughtful persons. I have, therefore, merely endeavoured to say a few words about the country in which so many of the best years of my life have been spent, because I find that the few ideas people do possess about it on this side of the Atlantic are, generally speaking, very fragmentary and often entirely erroneous.

I have confined myself principally to speaking of those States of which I have personal knowledge, although there are many more, both in the north and in the interior of Brazil, which offer an equally interesting field for study.

Whilst speaking of the country, I also take this opportunity to speak of the people, and it affords me great pleasure to state that I met many whose character I was able to respect and whose friendship

I valued highly. I venture to think, too, that although I have left the country, I have not lost the friends it was my happy privilege to make when I was living there.

I wish to acknowledge indebtedness for some data and information obtained from *Brazil: Its Natural Riches and Industries*, vol. II (published by the Comissão d'Expansão Economica do Brazil); *The Brazilian Year-book*, 1909; and *Porque me ufano do meu Paiz*, by Sr. Affonso Celso.

It gives me pleasure to acknowledge much help from my daughter, Mrs. Renney Allinson, at whose suggestion I have written this book.

F. B.

Table of Contents

CHAPTER I

PAGES

Return to England after forty years' absence—Experiences on voyage to Brazil—First impressions on landing at Pernambuco—The port—Entrance to the harbour—Transatlantic vessels have to lie a long way off—Improvement of port now in progress—Sharks appear there very often—Capital of province—City divided into three portions by river—Method of carrying sacks of sugar from stores to ships for exportation—Streets well lighted—Contrast very striking on going there direct from London—Atmosphere always clear—Southern constellations—Custom of sitting out at night—Heat not so oppressive as might have been expected so near the equator—Breeze blows constantly from the Atlantic over the land—Seasons divided into rainy and dry—Floods frequent in rainy season—In very hot weather preferable to walk out at midday than between two and three o'clock—Houses in Pernambuco not floored—General aspect of town—Brazil colonized by Portuguese—Church at Olinda has bolts of solid silver—People very friendly and courteous—Surprising way of giving credit to strangers—Dinner with the Governor of the Arsenal—The Governor's daughter thinks all Englishmen must be fond of beer—Black people dislike white people—Slavery in Brazil—Fortunes made by it—Conditions of slaves as compared with many of the working classes here—People carry everything on their heads—Their carriage is graceful in consequence—Insect life in Brazil—Fire flies—The Cigarra—Butterflies—Case of sunstroke from chasing butterflies in the sun—Moths—Mosquitoes—Snakes—We find one in our bedroom—Habit of snake to follow its mate if it

is captured or killed—Story of man who brings a dead one home and is followed by the other—Venomous and non-venomous ones—They work great destruction in hen-roosts—Make acquaintance with the white ant—Its destructiveness—Fate of a pine-wood box full of clothes I had brought with me from England .	1-16
---	------

CHAPTER II

Chief feature of Pernambuco is the trade in sugar and cotton—Way in which cotton is brought into the town—Fruit and fowls also brought into town on mule-back—Likewise charcoal—Fruit entirely new to us—Description of various kinds—Pine-apple—Mango—Banana—Was the enormous bunch of grapes mentioned as having been brought from Canaan by Joshua's spies really a bunch of bananas?—The guava—Brazilian housewife skilled in making fruit preserves—The younger women not so keen on acquiring skill in this homely art—Is it because the Brazilian woman is changing with the times?—Or, is it because household work is much more difficult to cope with now that slavery no longer exists in the country?—Used not to be at all uncommon to receive a gift of home-made preserves—The Araça—The Cajú—The mango—The fig-tree—The wild fig-tree grows to an enormous size—The passion-flower fruit—The Jaboticaba—The Jack-fruit—The Jambo—The Mangaba—The Pitanga—The Sapotí—The Abacate—Some kinds too perishable to travel—Brazil nuts rarely seen except in the State of Pará where they grow—Fruit-bearing palms—Manner in which men climb the palm-trees—European fruits acclimatized there—Oranges—The best grow in Bahia—Origin of our word marmalade—Works in construction at the ports of Pará and Pernambuco—Perhaps when completed the fruit-trade may develop—At present Buenos Aires and Montevideo are the chief customers—The vine cultivated in the Italian Colonies with great success—Wine made there rather rough to taste .	17-27
--	-------

CHAPTER III

Sugar and cotton the staple industries of Pernambuco—Sugar-cane introduced by the Portuguese—First
--

TABLE OF CONTENTS

ix

PAGES

sugar-mill set up in Brazil—Principal sugar-producing States lie within the Torrid Zone—Pernambuco the chief sugar-market of Brazil—The first sugar-mill set up there in 1534—The sugar-cane attains to a great height—Brazil consumes a great proportion of its own sugar—Rum distilled from the syrup—This is cheap—But the sugar itself is dearer in Brazil than in England—It is finer in quality and flavour—Cotton the other chief industry of Pernambuco—It is certain that it already existed in South America previously to the arrival of Europeans—The Indians were acquainted with it—Two great varieties—Influence of climate—All cotton-plants do not require the same climate—Soil is also important—The manner in which the soil should be prepared for sowing cotton-seed—Not always adopted in Brazil—Life of cotton-plant in the north—Crops or harvests in the north and in the south—Cotton more productive when grown on the plains than on the hills—But more exposed to moisture—Time for sowing—This plant is really at its best in the northern States—In the north the soil is said to yield more than in North America—Three harvests—Method of treating the plant after the third harvest or crop—Quantity of fibre varies—Quality is in inverse ratio to quantity—Herbaceous plant produces more than the arborescent—But the arborescent gives longer staple cotton—Nevertheless it is the herbaceous that is most widely cultivated—Reason for this—Culture of cotton-plant only increased to any extent since 1860—American Civil War gave great impetus to this industry—Shortage in North American markets turned attention of buyers to South America—Principal kinds cultivated—Help and encouragement lent by two national associations—Also by some of the State Governments—All the cotton grown in the north is of excellent quality—In some States the supply is not equal to the demand—Many cotton-mills—All prosperous—Dividends of 20 per cent., 30 per cent., and over—Brazil imports cotton goods to the value of some millions per annum—Extraction of oil—Manufacture of oil-cake as food for cattle only done on a very small scale . . .

28-35

CHAPTER IV

Brazil one of the largest countries in the world—Actual extent of territory—Superficial area of State of Ama-

zonas—Comparison with other countries—Population in 1907—Increasing rapidly—It has trebled in the State of São Paulo during the last ten years—It does not all lie within the Tropics—Its character—Nature's gifts bestowed with almost equal profusion all over it—It is well wooded and well watered—Has a long coast-line—Providence has endowed it with such good things as other nations have had to struggle to acquire—Wide range of latitude—Capable of producing sufficient for the wants of great multitudes—Pre-eminent amongst lands endowed with natural beauty—Bahia the old capital—The first portion to be discovered by the Portuguese—Discovery of Brazil—Some say it was accidental—Pedro Alvares Cabral takes possession in the name of the king of Portugal—The Portuguese indifferent to their new possession at first—Enervating effect upon a nation of a sudden access of wealth—Study of conquest of India by the Portuguese and of Mexico and Perú by the Spaniards—Race-degeneracy follows upon self-indulgence—Invigorating effect of labour and industry—Work evidently a prime necessity with the human race—Brazil was immensely rich in natural resources—But they were in a crude state—Required development at the hands of man—In India the Portuguese found cultivated wealth ready to be seized—Their interest in Brazil was languid by comparison—Colonization proceeded slowly at first—Prince Regent of Portugal and royal family embark for Brazil in 1807—They intend to go to Rio de Janeiro—Stress of weather compels them to put in to Bahia harbour—The people offer to build a palace—The Regent refuses because the harbour of Bahia was not readily defensible—Continues his voyage to Rio de Janeiro—Bahia is not so fine as Rio de Janeiro—Very pleasing panorama—Old and new parts of the city—Cuisine—Fish—A regulation worth noting—The fishermen put out to sea on rafts called Jangadas—Some are careless about carrying lights at night—Consequently they get run down by passing liners

36-45

CHAPTER V

Original name of the country was Vera Cruz—Why it was changed to Brazil—Brazil-wood grows there in abun-

TABLE OF CONTENTS

xi

PAGES

dance—Wood and timber of many kinds grow there— Collections of specimens possessed by Brazilian friends of mine—Good class wood used for firing in the interior of the country—List of names of various kinds with specific gravity—Cabinet-makers find some very hard —Kinds that are commonly used—Some are valuable for building and construction purposes—Experiments made to try the power of resistance to pressure— Brazil-wood offers the greatest resistance—Pau-ferro is of greater density—Constant felling of timber without corresponding planting—This is not only a possible economic evil for the future—But has already had a noticeable effect on the climate—Rainfall diminishing in regions where timber has been cut down in large quantities—Droughts out there are grievous visita- tions—Difficulties of doing much business with timber —Expense of transport very high—Freight to Europe also high—But timber is so plentiful and so good as to warrant an effort being made to overcome these diffi- culties—Result must prove successful ultimately. .	46-51
---	-------

CHAPTER VI

The national type—It is composed of three elements—
The Portuguese—The American aboriginal—The Afri-
can—The Portuguese government encouraged inter-
marriage with the Indians—Story of an Indian woman
who was baptised in Europe and had Catherine de
Medici for her godmother—Story of a Portuguese
adventurer who was wrecked on the coast of Brazil—
How he escaped death at the hands of the savages—
He returns to Europe on a French ship later on—An
Indian girl follows the vessel by swimming and is
drowned—Types of South American Indians—Some of
the tribes render service to the Portuguese—Story of a
chief who had rendered signal services to the governor,
but was incensed at being reproved for lack of courtesy
—Fierce hostility of some tribes—Some were cannibals
—Fate of first bishop of Brazil—Old Indian woman
asks Jesuit Father to get her the hand of a boy—Experi-
ment made by a young married lady to train an Indian
girl as a nursemaid—Indians amenable to kindly
treatment on the whole—They fiercely resented any
interference with their liberty—Cruelty and oppres-

sion in those days probably did not exceed what has occurred in the present day in another part of South America—The Guarany tribe—The Mundurucús—The Bororós—The Guatós—The Guaycurús—The Carayas—The Coroados—The Negroes—Marcilio Dias—Henrique Dias—The king of Portugal issues a decree in 1731 declaring that colour is no bar to office under the crown—Dom Pedro II bestows titles of nobility on some—Their position very different from what it is in North America—Story of the Visconde de Jequitinhonha—The princess Isabel dances with a coloured man at one of the court balls—The Barão de Cotegipe—A great leader of the old Conservative party—His high character—A very picturesque type often seen in Brazil—The Portuguese—Their history .

52-65

CHAPTER VII

Rio de Janeiro—Its magnificent harbour—Great extent thereof—Islands in the bay—They are made use of—One is fortified—Paquetá most picturesque—Light-house on the Island of Rasa—Sugar-loaf mountain—Corcovado (Hunchback) Mountain—Railway to ascend—Splendid panorama to be seen from the summit—The Central Avenue—The city greatly improved—Much more healthy now—Imprudence of newcomers—Large and excellent hospitals—The “ Beneficencia Portuguesa ”—The Cathedral of the Candelaria—Story of its foundation—New Municipal theatre—Cost £1,000,000—Madame Réjane exclaims at the lavishness of its decorations and fittings—Other theatres—Munroe Palace—The exhibition of 1908—Commemoration of the centenary of opening of ports of Brazil to international commerce—Tramcar service said to be the best in the world—Restaurants—Milk brought from Minas Geraes—Cost of living very high—The tax called “ Decima Urbana ”—Suburbs much higher above the sea-level than the city—Botafogo—Laranjeiras—Tijuca—Gavea—Copa Cabana—Nichteroy—National Museum formerly one of the Imperial Palaces—Enormous meteorite, Bendegó, to be seen there—How it was brought to Rio—Amusing encounter with a stranger—His disparaging remarks anent the size of England—My last visit to Rio de Janeiro—

TABLE OF CONTENTS

xiii

PAGES

The city quite transformed in appearance—Great improvement in the harbour—National School of Art—National Library—Portuguese Reading-room—Academy of Medicine and the Polytechnic School .	66-81
--	-------

CHAPTER VIII

The Mantiqueira Mountains—Home of brigands in former days—Winding course of the railway to reach higher level—Roads—Generally only mule-paths—Fine road from Petropolis to Juiz de F6ra—A handsome house built to be offered to the Emperor—He declined to accept it—Barbacena—High elevation—Summer resort for visitors from Rio de Janeiro—The gold mines—They were formerly worked by slaves—A member of the Society for the Abolition of Slavery held shares in this company—Noted diamonds found in Minas Geraes—Immense quantity of iron ore—Agricultural and pastoral resources of this State—It is celebrated for its cheese—Mineral springs—High temperature of some—They are much frequented—The great Brazilian spider—Special observations and experiments made with it—Huge black ant	82-93
--	-------

CHAPTER IX

The greatest coffee-producing country in the world—A coffee plantation, or, "Cafezal"—Pleasant perfume of the blossom—The trees are very delicate and require much care—They are susceptible to sudden changes of temperature—Affected by cold or wind—Transplanting necessary—A very high temperature is likewise detrimental—Much damage done sometimes by certain parasites—Picking the berries—Treatment—Preparing for the market—Two methods of doing this—Over-production causes a great fall in price—Serious crisis for the planters—Many schemes to improve their condition—Result of final decision—The Convention of Taubat6—Loan of £15,000,000 raised here in England to carry out this project and establish the "Caixa de Convers6o"—Commiss6o de Expans6o do Brazil to make a propaganda of Brazilian products—Fazenda coffee—Association subsidized by the State

of São Paulo—Santos the great port for shipping coffee—Odour pervades the town and permeates everything—It is not pleasant, although the aroma of the prepared beverage is—Railway from Santos to São Paulo—Ascent of the mountain—Picturesque scenery.	94-104
---	--------

CHAPTER X

Capital of the State of São Paulo on the tropical limit—Great elevation above sea-level—Cooler than Rio de Janeiro—Temperature very variable—A very prosperous city—Connected by rail with Rio de Janeiro—Many English in São Paulo—Brazilian Navy organized by an Englishman—Lord Cochrane—Ypiranga—Independence of Brazil proclaimed in 1822—Beginning of the Empire—First Brazilian Parliament—Dom Pedro I abdicates in favour of his son—The new Emperor only five years of age—The Regency—Dom Pedro II declared of legal age in 1840—Government established on the English model—Difficult problem of slavery—Tax levied to free them—Raising of tram-car fare causes much indignation—Car overturned and burned—Tax charged on travelling by Transatlantic boats—Some owners free their slaves voluntarily—The Countess of Parahybuna did so—Offered her slaves land to cultivate—Not one remained—Slaves freed by Law in 1888—Much discontent among the planters—Compensation demanded—Is refused—Curious saying, "Para Inglez ver"—Suggested explanation of it—Dom Pedro II in Europe—The Princess, his daughter, as Regent—Character of the late Emperor—He sends Carlos Gomes to Europe at his own expense—Bronze statue to Dom Pedro II in Gardens at Petropolis—people desire that his remains should be taken to Brazil—A Brazilian visitor to London expresses surprise at finding no record of his country at Madame Tussaud's—Great Republican propaganda made by Silva Jardim in 1889—The Princess visits several places where he had addressed the people	105-116
--	---------

CHAPTER XI

The revolt of the Army on the 15th November, 1889—Marshal Deodoro da Fonseca requests the Emperor

TABLE OF CONTENTS

xv

PAGES

to leave the country—Announces that the monarchy is extinct—Baron de Ladario fired on—Many people are enthusiastic at the change—Strange notions of equality—Deodoro da Fonseca head of the Provisional Government—Promulgation of the new Constitution—Deodoro chosen President—No harmony among the new rulers of the land—Great discontent amongst the leaders—Silva Jardim—He leaves the country and naturalizes himself a Portuguese—Falls into the crater of Vesuvius—Disastrous measure of the Minister of Finance—Establishment of Banks of issue—Exchange falls in consequence—Country flooded with paper money—Congress forcibly dissolved by the President, who assumes the Dictatorship—His act provokes great hostility—Self-appointed Dictator compelled to resign—Marshal Floriano Peixoto assumes the vacant presidential chair—This is in flagrant disregard of the Constitution—Revolution breaks out in Rio Grande do Sul—Revolt of the Navy in the Bay of Rio de Janeiro—Floriano Peixoto sends to the United States of North America to purchase a man-of-war—It arrives in Bahia and founders—The Government party adopts the title of "Partido de Legalidade"—This is just what it was not—Floriano beats down all opposition—The Civil War in Rio Grande do Sul continues—Money apparently abundant—Many speculative schemes—Great collapse—Severe crisis—Political discontent—Unwise legislation—Over-speculation—The whole country depressed—The President succeeding Floriano Peixoto was Dr. Prudente de Moraes—An attempt is made on his life—The Minister for War, Marshal Carlos Machado de Bittencourt, is killed in trying to defend the President—At the end of 1897 Exchange drops to 5½—The Funding Loan arranged for in London—The next President, Dr. Campos Salles, has to burn much of the paper money—This produces beneficial results—Exchange rises—When it reaches 15 a proposition is made to fix that as the Par value—This proposition emanates from the coffee-planters, 117-129

CHAPTER XII

All titles of nobility abolished with the advent of the Republic—The people who possess them appear to prefer

to keep them all the same—Great ambition to have the right to be called “Dr.”—National flag altered—The old much handsomer than the new—Holidays altered by Republicans—Capital punishment abolished—An increase in the crime of murder—The case of Motta Coqueiro—The Emperor ever afterwards refused to sign a death-warrant—Duelling declared illegal—Challenges begin to be made—Amusing account of one—Pattern of postage stamps modified several times—Repudiation of the former ones—Public money disappearing from various Governmental departments—This loss greatly exceeds what Dom Pedro II received from the Treasury—These defalcations do not occur in the State of Rio Grande do Sul—Non-attendance of the Senators and Deputies now they are paid so much per day—Assembly much prolonged—Business hurried through at the end of the session now—Great number of public employees—Especially in the Custom Houses—Autocratic manner in which duties are levied in the various Custom Houses—Some of the men who have come forward within the last few years have shown great disinterestedness—Hopes that the number of such may increase		130-141
--	-----------	---------

CHAPTER XIII

The climate of Brazil—Various conditions to consider—Much of the interior at a great elevation—Consequently cooler—Greater heat along the coast—Amazon valley subject to annual floods—Places further removed from the Equator where the heat is quite as great—Heat less oppressive there—Heat felt more here—Ill effects attributed to climate sometimes arise from imprudence—Southern States of Brazil most suited to Europeans being in the Temperate Zone—The coast of Paraná—Difficult for navigation—Good ports—Great bay of Paranaguá—Curityba, the capital—Considerable elevation—Railway from the coast—Important piece of engineering—Oysters—Great trade in bananas—Herva mate—Known here as Paraguay tea—Method of preparing for the market—Way of making the beverage and manner of taking it—Excellent known qualities of the herb—Great quantities exported to the River Plate—Indians in Paraguay

TABLE OF CONTENTS

xvii

PAGES

—They procure the Herva—They are greatly imposed upon—Climate of Santa Catharina very agreeable—Cost of living less there than anywhere else in Brazil—Fine view of mainland seen from the island of Desterro—Flourishing Colonies in this State—Settlement of territorial dispute between the States of Paraná and Santa Catharina	142-149
---	---------

CHAPTER XIV

Rio Grande do Sul—The Bar a great obstacle to navigation—Vessels have to wait days to enter the port sometimes—High freights in consequence—Difficulty caused by the sand—Work being carried out at present to overcome this—Another scheme to deal with the difficulty—By opening up a port further north—Distance from Rio Grande to Porto Alegre—Remarkable change in the coast-line—The Serra do Mar not really a range of mountains—High tableland—Looks like a mountain ridge as seen from the sea—Sand dunes further south—The old town of São José buried in the sand—Fish abundant in Rio Grande—Witticism of young Brazilian lady concerning Rio Grande—Lagoa dos Patos—Quantities of wild duck—A pastoral land—Very fertile soil—Black ant a great pest—A flight of locusts surpasses all imagination—Fortunately they only appear very rarely—Some bees indigenous to Brazil—Wax exported to Germany—A large apiary in Rio Pardo—The silkworm and the mulberry-tree—A fine native variety of the silkworm—Silk goods made in the Colony of Caxias—Also by a Sisterhood of Brazilian Nuns—European flowers and fruit grown in the State—Also vegetables—Orchids common—Not held in favour because they are considered to be unlucky—The State of Rio Grande do Sul has only a little more than a million people—In extent it is nearly half the size of France—German Colonists have prospered there—Buried treasure—Italian Colonies engage in wine-making—Also other industries—Great distance some Colonists have to travel to dispose of their produce—Government assistance to Colonists—Valuable Mandioca root—Method of preparing it taught by the Indians to the Portuguese—This root attains to an enormous size—Tapioca also prepared from it—The

rivers in this State—They might be made navigable by a system of locks	150-165
---	---------

CHAPTER XV

The different States in Brazil all self-governing—Customs duties, Post and Telegraph revenue only contributed to the Central Government—The right of self-govern- ment likewise granted to the various Municipalities— Measures in violation of the Constitution have resulted in consequence—Inter-State duties—Varying taxes in the Municipalities of the same State—Disregard of the President's decision—Annoyance in travelling from the frontier—Repeated examination of luggage— A gentleman interrogated because he had nothing in one of his bags—Much vigilance to check contraband— Very difficult to stop this—There is a great incentive to carry it on—Information is brought to the authori- ties of some contraband which is going to be passed across the frontier—Preparations to capture it—Amus- ing dénouement—Existing facilities for smuggling— A house on the frontier with front door in one country and back door in the other—Experiences in travelling by "Diligencia"—Not very punctual in starting— Various accidents—Journey across the camp with my family—Our chief "Peão" had no hands—Very deft notwithstanding—We lose our way—Have to run in at a "Rancho" on the side of a hill—We are suspicious of the people—They prove most hospitable—Hospitality a common characteristic here—We meet a great drove of cattle on the road—Great number of cows—Milk is very scarce in the winter—Butter still more so— Much imported butter sold—Cattle generally uncared for—They suffer much in winter time—Especially during rainy weather—Quantities of silver used in horse gear—A custom derived from the neighbouring Spanish Republics—An Englishman who had three hundred sovereigns on his horse trappings—A ride through a primeval forest—Striking contrast between the quiet places in a large town and these solitudes—"The land of the far distance"	166-177
--	---------

CHAPTER XVI

Rio Grande the seaport of the State of the same name— A city of public functionaries—Pelotas is the next port
--

TABLE OF CONTENTS

xix

PAGES

of call on the way to the capital—Visit to H.M.S. *Beagle*—Railways in this State—Pelotas owes its existence to the “Xarqueadas”—It is a wealthy city—Story of how a certain house there was painted throughout—The giant Cactus—One of my sons gets a thorn in his cheek when an infant—Only gets rid of it more than twenty years afterwards—A terrific hail-storm—Roofs and windows smashed—Boom in tiles and window-glass in consequence—The “Xarqueadas”—First started in Pelotas—Now found in various parts of the State—Frequent slaughtering of cattle a brutalizing occupation—Nevertheless it is done as rapidly and neatly as possible—Description of the way it is done at the great establishment at Fray Bentos in the Uruguay Republic—Branding of cattle when young—This marking is prejudicial to the hides when converted into leather—Some animals were branded in a less conspicuous part—The hides rejected in Europe in consequence—The South American cowboy—His love of music—“Modinhas” a distinctive style of music of a pleasing though simple kind—The people are very fond of dancing—Also of horse-racing—A horse-race will attract great numbers of people from a great distance—Fireworks—Rockets used on every conceivable occasion—The burning of Judas Iscariot in effigy on Easter Saturday—The eve of St. John’s day is a great occasion for bonfires—Also for dances. 178–188

CHAPTER XVII

The disputed territory of “Missões,” or “Misiones”—Many traces of the work of the Jesuits in this region—Seven towns founded in their various settlements—Traces of their presence to be found on the opposite side also—Gold found in this State—Also copper—Semi-precious stones—Some clear white stones made yellow by firing—Hollow stones with water in them—Visit to a gentleman who had a collection of articles made by the Indians of Matto Grosso—A fine, strong bow made by them—Also a curiously worked hammock—The “Bola” an instrument of warfare—Used by the Indians—Solis, the Spanish explorer, killed by one—Favourite amusement of Indian children—The wild fig-tree—One of immense size—

The Unbú grows rapidly to great proportions—Quite different from the Umbú of the north—Quebraxo—Bamboos—The pine-tree—Fruit or nut is very nutritious—The Mimosa—The flora of Brazil unrivalled in beauty and variety—Not so with the fauna—Wild animals seem to be more scarce—The “ Jacaré,” or South American alligator—Birds numerous and beautiful—The “ Sabia ”—The humming-bird—The “ Araponga ”—Game plentiful—Destruction of game at all seasons—Practice of exploding dynamite cartridges in the rivers to bring up fish—The “ Abestrúz ”—The heron—Wild cats—Deer—Wild boar, or “ Javali ”—Many more	189-198
---	---------

CHAPTER XVIII

Porto Alegre, the capital of the State of Rio Grande do Sul—Excellent situation—Four rivers all converging to it—These all flow into the Lake—Appropriate name—Pleasant appearance—Very hilly—Commercially flourishing—German type much in evidence—German merchants more attentive to the wishes of their customers than English merchants—Trade with Brazil rapidly increasing—Markets worth studying—Typewriters—Public buildings—The theatre the property of the State—Musical societies—Three racecourses—Much private entertainment—People very sociable—The Carnival—Difference between Carnival in the south and in Rio de Janeiro and some other parts of Brazil—Old game of “ Entrudo ” superseded by confetti-throwing—Custom of naming streets after public men—Dates of historic events also given to streets—The names of streets are often changed—How a group set out one evening to pull down the name of a street and substitute another—Tram-cars—Trial of new electric tram-car one evening	199-210
---	---------

CHAPTER XIX

The equine and bovine species not indigenous to South America—South American wild boar—The Llama—Vicunha—These both known and made use of in some

TABLE OF CONTENTS

xxi

PAGES

parts—Also the Alpaca—The Portuguese introduce domestic cattle—Much land suitable for breeding and rearing them—A very lucrative industry—Some States depend on others for their supply—The long distances traversed by large droves of cattle sometimes—Difficulties on the way—Cattle weakened thereby—Cattle fairs in some States—Exhibitions—Good results—Number of Xarqueadas—Number of cattle slaughtered in them—The Brazilian horse—Its origin—Very enduring—The "Marchador"—Its special gait—Easy riding—Amusing mistake in the use of the word "cantar"—Sheep-rearing—Goats	211-218
---	---------

CHAPTER XX

The progress of Brazil—This is not due to the change in the régime, as some people claim—The country cannot help advancing—Protection carried to an extreme—This is ostensibly to protect national industries—These are sometimes fictitious, the term being a misnomer—Some manufactures which are prospering nevertheless—Need of population—Quantity of mineral wealth—Gold—Silver—Copper—Lead—Iron—Manganese—Monazite Sand—A curious method of prolonging the route of a railway—Explanation given to a friend of mine—The Government more careful in making contracts now—Brush with a "Delegado de Policia"—He is dismissed from his post—"Tribunal de Contas"—"Junta Commercial"	219-227
---	---------

CHAPTER XXI

Some characteristics in Brazil similar to those noticed by Mrs. Alec Tweedie in Mexico—Names given to shops—Bedrooms furnished more for appearance than for comfort—National custom on the occasion of a wedding—Strange to English ideas—English customs equally strange to the people of Brazil—Marriages—Civil ceremony now compulsory—"Padrinhos" and "Madrinhas" instead of Best Man and Bridesmaids—A "Padrinho" or "Madrinha" requires a special Dispensation to marry the person for whom he or she has

stood sponsor in the event of remarriage—Case of a lady being “Madrinha” at her sister’s wedding and afterwards marrying the bridegroom herself, at her sister’s decease—Divorce—Story of a Notary Public who married about fifty couples before Civil Marriage had become law—Brazilian drawing-rooms—A first call—People very friendly when better acquainted—Their excitable temperament—Children allowed to sit up late—Neighbours generally pleasant—Kindness in case of sickness—Baptismal names—Classic, historic and so on—Espirito Santo	228-240
---	---------

CHAPTER XXII

All Soul’s Day—How it is kept there—Law regarding burial of the dead within twenty-four hours—Interment always takes place expeditiously—Everything in this respect very different from English usages—Deceased person not wrapped in a shroud—But dressed—Sometimes in ordinary costume—Sometimes in a special way—Young unmarried women dressed as brides—Some ladies after the style of their patron Saints—The “camera ardente”—The “Velorio” or vigil—The bier is carried to the church by friends of the family—Sometimes it is carried all the way to the burial-ground—Near relatives do not attend a funeral—Until recently children’s coffins used to be carried open—Coffins black, purple, white or coloured according to sex, and age—Story of mock “Velorio” get up to frighten a “Gaucho”—Result—The carrying of weapons—A shot fired into our dining-room—A human arsenal—Real estate or otherwise equally divided amongst the children—Division of property of married people	241-247
--	---------

CHAPTER XXIII

The Portuguese language—Difference in manner of speaking of Lusitanians and Brazilians—Influence of Spanish on the frontier—Brazilians have inherited literary tastes from their Portuguese progenitors—Some Brazilians poets—Castro Alves—Conçalves Dias—Strange manner in which the poet’s prayer was fulfilled—José de Alencar—His principal romances— <i>O Guarany</i> — <i>Iracema</i> — <i>Cinco Minutos</i> —Tobias Barreto—José Bonifacio de Andrada	248-254
--	---------

TABLE OF CONTENTS

xxiii

PAGES

CHAPTER XXIV

Lotteries—Very frequent—Another mode of gambling deduced therefrom—*Jogo do Bicho*—A unique case of ultra-scrupulousness on the part of a seller of lottery tickets—Clever manœuvre practised on a rich man to obtain the hand of his daughter in marriage—Politics—Political feeling affects entire families—Is manifest even to the grave sometimes—Great inclination for public speaking and fluency therein—A grave-side oration—Startling effect on the hearers—The Press—Newspapers common all over the country—Well written articles to be found in the better class ones—Heated discussions carried on sometimes—National mode of dealing with the office of a paper which has given offence—Names of some of the leading papers in Rio de Janeiro—A few of the humorous ones . 255-262

CHAPTER XXV

Other States besides Minas Geraes that are rich in minerals—Still extensive tracts of land unexplored in Brazil—Interior never yet fully surveyed—Only accurate maps of the coast and part of the interior—Greater part of territory consists of highlands—Mean elevation of highlands—No very high mountains—Strip of lowland along Atlantic coast—One of the great natural advantages is the possession of many rivers—The Amazon the foremost—Called Solimões too—Principal affluents—Lowland areas subject to annual flooding—The home of the rubber-tree—Vast forests of these trees—Carelessness in collecting the gum—The São Francisco—The Paulo Affonso Falls—Comparison with Niagara Falls—Other great rivers and waterfalls—Important topographical feature—A waterway from the Amazon to the River Plate—Ceará the least favoured as it is subject to droughts—The flora of the Amazon valley—The Carnahúba—Great lack of enterprise all over the country—And especially of initiative—Plea put forward—High taxation—Taxes of a threefold character—Average minimum return of any well managed enterprise—Brazil offers a fairer field to explorers than the Arctic or Antarctic regions—Brazil bound to become a great nation—What it most lacks is population—Her prosperity should be great 263-271

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

	FACING PAGE
AUTHOR'S HOME	<i>Frontispiece</i>
Park Boa Vista, Rio	2
Itamaraty Cascade, Petropolis }	6
Westphalia, Petropolis	6
Public Park, Belem	11
Jardin da Gloria, on the Bay of Rio	21
The Public Gardens, Pará. From "Brazil In 1912"	26
Scene in the State of Parana	37
The Rio Do Peixe, in Santa Catharina }	37
Church of S. Bento, Bahia	43
Bay of Rio Janeiro, showing Sugar Loaf Mountain	67
Railway Track up the Corcovado (The Hunchback)	69
Entrance to the Rue Paysandu, Rio	74
Avenida Central, Rio	79
Rubber Transport, River Xingú, Pará }	79
Railway Station, São Paulo	105
A Forest Path, São Paulo. From "Brazil In 1912"	110
Avenue, November 15, Pará	118
Brazilian Super-Dreadnought, <i>São Paulo</i> . From "Brazil In 1912"	124
London and Brazilian Bank in Curitiba	145
Valley das Antas, Rio Grande Do Sul }	151
Ivahy Colony, Paraná	151
Gaúcho with Guitar	187
National Museum, Rio de Janeiro	206
Ilha Das Flores, Bay of Rio : Emigrants' Hostel }	206
Avenida Koeler, Petropolis	213
Mandioca Plantation, S. Paulo }	213
Scene on the Parana Railway	221
The Famous Iron-Ore Peak of Itabira Do Campo, State of Minas Geraes }	263
Rio Grande Do Sul	263
Piracicaba Falls, S. Paulo. From "Brazil In 1912"	267

FORTY YEARS IN BRAZIL

CHAPTER I

Return to England after forty years' absence—Experiences on voyage to Brazil—First impressions on landing at Pernambuco—The port—Entrance to the harbour—Transatlantic vessels have to lie a long way off—Improvement of port now in progress—Sharks appear there very often—Capital of province—City divided into three portions by river—Method of carrying sacks of sugar from stores to ships for exportation—Streets well lighted—Contrast very striking on going there direct from London—Atmosphere always clear—Southern constellations—Custom of sitting out at night—Heat not so oppressive as might have been expected so near the equator—Breeze blows constantly from the Atlantic over the land—Seasons divided into rainy and dry—Floods frequent in rainy season—In very hot weather preferable to walk out at midday than between two and three o'clock—Houses in Pernambuco not floored—General aspect of town—Brazil colonized by Portuguese—Church at Olinda has bolts of solid silver—People very friendly and courteous—Surprising way of giving credit to strangers—Dinner with the Governor of the Arsenal—The Governor's daughter thinks all Englishmen must be fond of beer—Black people dislike white people—Slavery in Brazil—Fortunes made by it—Conditions of slaves as compared with many of the working classes here—People carry everything on their heads—Their carriage is graceful in consequence—Insect life in Brazil—Fireflies—The Cigarra—Butterflies—Case of sun-stroke from chasing butterflies in the sun—Moths—Mosquitoes—Snakes—We find one in our bedroom—Habit of snake to follow its mate if it is captured or killed—Story of man who brings a dead one home and is followed by the other—Venomous and non-venomous ones—They work great destruction in hen-roosts—Make acquaintance with the white ant—Its destructiveness—Fate of a pine-wood box full of clothes I had brought with me from England.

RETURNING to my native land recently, and arriving at the port of Southampton, I found it difficult to realize that exactly forty years had

elapsed, to the very month, since I had left that same port for Pernambuco; and, having a very vivid recollection of that time, as also of the many and varied experiences of those long years, I have been tempted to commit them to writing.

We sailed on the Royal Mail Steam Packet *Oneida*, and the voyage to Pernambuco took us nineteen days. My return journey only took seventeen days from Rio de Janeiro, which is many degrees further south than Pernambuco, and between this latter port and Southampton the R.M.S.P. *Amazon* only took thirteen days.

On our first morning out—for we lay at anchor all night just off the Isle of Wight on account of the strong wind which was blowing against us—a seaman, who was engaged on some work on the side of the vessel, was washed away by a wave. A boat was immediately manned and lowered, but capsized, throwing its occupants into the sea; they were rescued with much difficulty, but the boat and the man who fell overboard were both lost. This fact, coupled with the bad and gloomy weather, had a most depressing influence on the greater number of the passengers, and this condition continued until we were drawing near to Lisbon, when a complete change took place, and we enjoyed an uninterrupted succession of beautiful days and nights for the rest of the voyage until we reached Pernambuco.

In those now distant times the contrast between different countries was more sharply marked than in these days of rapid travel and easy intercommunication, and our first impressions on landing in



PARK BOA VISTA, RIO.

Pernambuco were exceedingly strange. The change from London was very striking in every way: the people, a good many of whom were coloured, and some even black, first excited our curiosity and then aroused our interest; and the surroundings were totally unfamiliar, although many of them, I hasten to say, were quite the reverse of unpleasant.

But, perhaps it would not be amiss to pause here and say a few words about the port of Pernambuco before going any further.

The entrance to the harbour is difficult for ships of heavy burthen, and quite impossible for steamers of great draught, the consequence being that the Transatlantic steamers have to lie a long way off, about two miles out, and the passengers have to land in boats; in bad weather it is most unpleasant going over the reef. When the weather is very rough ladies are lowered down the side of the vessel in a kind of basket. This, fortunately, was not necessary when we arrived, and my wife was well able to step down into the boat, in the usual manner, with me.

The northern sea-board of Brazil is guarded by jagged rocks alternating with shallows, which fact renders it difficult of access to ships, and makes navigation extremely perilous. This is peculiarly the case with the port of Pernambuco, where there are three of these shallows: to the East, that called the English bank, six hundred metres in length, little more than half of which is covered by water during low tide at the new and the full moon; to the North-East, the Olinda bank; and to the South-East, the Taci-Boia bank. There is a long

line of reefs skirting the coast here, separated by natural channels which serve as entrances to deep and sheltered anchoring places. This is a characteristic feature of the port of Pernambuco.

Various schemes have been discussed of late years for the improvement of this port, and the work has now been in hand for some time, and should be in a fair way towards completion.

Sharks are not infrequent visitors in these waters, and I recollect hearing of two sailors on board of an English ship, who, thinking they would like to bathe in the sea, dipped into the water, and, before their horrified comrades could do anything to warn them or help them, they were seized by these voracious monsters of the deep, and were seen no more.

The capital of the State (or Province, as it was then styled, for the Republic only dates from 1889), although generally known to Europeans by the same name, viz., Pernambuco, is called there Recife (Reef). It is divided into three parts by the river Capiberibe (pronounced Cahpibereebe), which winds in and out in the shape of the letter S before falling into the Atlantic, these three divisions being respectively : Recife proper, Santo Antonio and Boa Vista (Belle Vue).

Recife is the oldest part of the town : it is occupied by quays, big warehouses and sugar and cotton stores, and is the centre of the import and export trade. In the general aspect of this part of the city there is nothing particularly pleasing to arrest the eye. One characteristic of the place, however, **and** one that may be seen any day during the busy season, is the carrying of the sacks of sugar from the

stores to the vessels in port for embarkation. This is done by men, chiefly negroes and mulattoes, and the only suit (?) of clothes they wear consists of just a skull cap made of plaited straw and a piece of sackcloth fastened round their loins, which, considering the work they engage in, is about the most practical style to adopt, for they carry these sacks of sugar on their heads, and as some of them may have been lying an extra long time in the warehouses, it is not an uncommon thing to see the sugar melting in the heat of the sun, and dripping from the sack on to the carrier's back. The weight of each of these sacks is one hundred and sixty pounds, and the men are paid by piece work, so much per sack, the usual load being one, but I well remember seeing a man who used to carry three at a time—two on his head and one in his arms—each journey he made to the vessel. On Sundays he sported a very different style of dress from that described above, and was scarcely recognizable in his complete tailor-made suit and smoking a cigar, which was quite a mark of distinction. He was then a very great person.

Santo Antonio represents the retail business part of the city, and the shops here are good, whilst the streets, even in those days, were remarkably well lighted ; indeed, the Rua Nova (since named Rua General Victorino) was quite the best lighted street I had seen up to that time, for, besides the regular number of gas-lamps provided by the civic authorities, there were as many more provided by the inhabitants.

From this part of the town there was already

at that time a short, local steam-railway called *Trilhos Urbanos*, with stations at convenient distances, connecting it with Boa Vista, where many of the best suburban residences were to be found, and the *Passagem Magdalena*, another handsome residential quarter, had a line of mule-drawn tram-cars leading to it from town which was inaugurated in 1871.

The contrast, going straight from London, 51° N. lat. to Pernambuco, 8° south of the Equator, was indeed a most striking one : the tropical vegetation generally, and more especially the tall and beautiful palms with their crests of slender, feathery branches wafting gracefully in the breeze, being a pleasurable sight to eyes accustomed to the smoke-begrimed edifices of London.

The atmosphere was beautifully clear, and this was quite as evident at night as during the day, for the stars were as numerous and bright towards the horizon as they were immediately overhead. In the former case one is, of course, looking through a greater volume of air, and were it not clear, this would naturally tend to obscure the vision somewhat, but this does not occur.

Of the southern constellations the most beautiful and the best known is, of course, the Southern Cross, or *Cruzeiro do Sul*. It requires no description, so I need merely state that the stars of which it is composed are intensely brilliant and some of them of great magnitude.

The moon, too, shines with much greater brilliancy there than in northern skies ; indeed, without wishing to speak disrespectfully of our luminary of the



ITAMARATY CASCADE, PETROPOLIS-
From "Brazil in 1912."



WESTPHALIA, PETROPOLIS.
From "Brazil in 1912."

night, I thought, when I returned to England, that its efforts at illumination were very feeble in comparison with what I had grown accustomed to see.

There is something indescribably pleasant in this tropical country to sit outside the house in the cool of the evening, as it is the custom to do there, with the most luxuriant vegetation all around one, the deep blue firmament above literally teeming with the brightest of stars, and the cool, refreshing breeze from the ocean all contributing to produce a delightful sensation of restfulness and calm.

Although we were so near the Equator we did not suffer so much from the heat as might have been expected, for there was always a wind blowing from the ocean over the land, bringing a grateful sense of coolness with it. This sea-breeze is called *Viração* (pronounced *Veerasaong*), and, in the whole of the three years that I was there I have no recollection of its ceasing more than once, for a short time, and the difference caused by this cessation was immediate and by no means agreeable. It will be readily understood that a slight wind blowing constantly from the ocean over the land tends to modify very considerably such conditions of atmosphere as would otherwise be most oppressive.

The seasons there are divided into the dry season and the rainy season, there being very little variation in the temperature all the year round. In the rainy season the rain comes down in torrents, and if this continues for any length of time it causes the rivers to overflow and inundate the houses in some places. I remember going into a house where there was evidence, from the marks on the walls, that the

water had risen to the height of an ordinary table. On another occasion when there had been a flood, people were taken from the city to their homes on Jangadas, or rafts.

In the hot weather I found it preferable to walk out at midday, when the sun was immediately overhead, and consequently cast no shadow beyond a small patch immediately at one's feet, to going out at two or three o'clock in the afternoon, when it would strike directly on the side of one's face!

The houses in Pernambuco, at any rate in those days, had no floor, that is to say, no wood flooring: the better ones had marble flooring or a tiled pavement according to the owner's taste and means, and the humbler ones had no flooring or pavement at all. Needless to say this is much more suitable for the climatic conditions which prevail there. I have not revisited Pernambuco of late years, but I believe they are still the same. My own description is given from memory.

The general aspect of the town was distinctly Portuguese in character, which was not surprising, seeing that Brazil was originally colonized by the Portuguese. The town of Olinda, some little distance from Pernambuco, was the former capital of the Province, and possesses, or, at all events, possessed at that time, a church the bolts and fastenings of which were all made of solid silver. Apart from this there was no building deserving any special mention, as the town did not boast any architectural features of note.

Over the Capiberibe there were two good iron

bridges, quite new then, and two old wooden ones, which have long since been replaced.

The people we found very pleasant and courteous: One thing that surprised us when we first began going to the shops, was the fact that, if we had not the right amount for our purchases, and if the shopman did not happen to have any small change, he would say: "Never mind, next time will do," and this although we were complete strangers in the place. The manners amongst the upper classes were especially agreeable and friendly.

In this connexion it is, perhaps, not out of place to relate the following incident: one evening we were dining at the Arsenal with the Governor and his family, and there were several other guests present too. The Governor's daughter, who could speak a little English, turning to me, said, with a pretty accent: "Will you like some beer?" and, upon my saying: "No, thank you," she remarked: "Then, you are not English." "Why not?" I naturally inquired. "Oh," she returned, "the English all do like beer."

The airs and graces of the blacks (the freed ones, by which I mean those who had been brought over from Africa as slaves, but since obtained their freedom) were a great source of amusement to us at first. I remember one evening when we were walking along the Rua Nova a black woman who was passing us suddenly drew aside with a lofty air, exclaiming: "O, meu Deus, os brancos perto de mim!"—Oh, dear (*meu Deus* is really the equivalent of the French *mon Dieu*), the whites close to me!

I may remark that the blacks always speak of

white people as "the whites" in the same manner that the latter always speak of them as "the blacks" or "the negroes." Of course, this woman would not have done this to a white Brazilian, or even, probably, to a Portuguese, but towards foreigners I suppose she thought she might safely venture to show the scorn and hatred which some of them no doubt felt for the white race in general.

In those days slavery was still flourishing in Brazil, and was the ugliest blot on the administration of the country. Many a fortune there sprang from this evil source. There was one very fine house in Pernambuco, built by a man who had made a great deal of money in the slave trade, and in the garden there were several statues, which were found all painted black one morning! This had been done in the night, evidently by some one who remembered the origin of his wealth.

During my long stay in Brazil I saw all this change: slavery was abolished by law on the 13th May, 1888. This law was signed by H.I.H. the princess Isabel (the comtesse d'Eu), who was acting as regent during a visit of her father, the emperor, Dom Pedro II, to Europe.

But, whilst on this subject I want to say that, although some slaves may have been (and undoubtedly were) badly treated, a great many of them were better off than some free-born people here in England in the present day, who, with all their hard work, do not get sufficient to keep themselves in good working condition, whilst in the case of the slaves it was obviously to their master's interest that they should be kept in good health



PUBLIC PARK, BELEM.

and fit for work. They had board and lodging free, and were clothed at their master's expense, and, indeed, all their elementary wants were supplied. Consequently they were free from the harassing care and anxiety that must be an ever-present burden to many a wage-earner here.

By this I do not mean, for one moment, to advocate, or even to defend slavery, but merely to point out that worse conditions prevail in a country where no slavery exists.

Another thing that attracted our attention very much was the way people invariably carried things on their heads : baskets of fruit, jars of water, and even ordinary bottles. I have also seen them carrying large water-melons in this way, a water-melon not being, from its shape, the easiest thing to carry on one's head. Their walk is consequently graceful, and their carriage not without a certain stateliness.

Insect life was one of the most remarkable features there, and it was quite weirdly beautiful to see myriads of fireflies dancing about like points of light amongst the trees and shrubs every evening. It is curious to see the firefly emit its light and stop it suddenly at will, although the reason for thus turning on the light and then turning it off is not apparent to the interested onlooker. It is quite possible to see the time by the fitful light produced by this little creature if it can be placed on one's watch-dial, and if it will condescend to give out its light, at the right moment. The name given to it in the south of Brazil, i.e. *Vagalume*, literally vague light, is even more appropriate than that by which

it is called in the north, namely, Pyrilampo, or fire-lamp, although that, too, is very apt.

The Cigarra is another of the curious insects peculiar to the tropics: it has a bluish body something like that of a grasshopper in shape, with diaphanous, silvery wings; but the most extraordinary thing about it is the noise it makes, rather like the tuning of a miniature fiddle, which increases in volume, as the insect proceeds to give forth the sound, to an almost incredible extent, until, sometimes, it bursts.

Butterflies, I need hardly say, exist in great numbers and infinite variety, some of them being exquisitely marked, and of beautiful vivid hues. Some very fine collections have been got together, and a few years ago I heard of one for which the sum of one thousand pounds had been paid in England. I do not know if it be true, but it is quite probable and much more reasonable than the sums sometimes given for postage stamps, not to mention other things. Butterfly-hunting, or perhaps I ought to say, butterfly-chasing, is the lure that leads many an unwary new arrival into spending hours and hours careering about in the open country exposing himself to the full force of the sun until he is suddenly struck down by its fierce rays. This fascinating pastime has been responsible for many a case of sunstroke, one of which, to my personal knowledge, ended fatally.

Besides the insects which are beautiful to look at and interesting to watch, there are quite a number that cannot be classified under either category, some of which are negatively troublesome and others

quite actively so. As a sample of the first, I may mention a small moth with a pale yellow body and white wings which is a pathetic illustration of

“the desire of the moth for the flame,”

if I may be permitted to slightly paraphrase Shelley.

In a hot climate one naturally lives with doors and windows open during many hours of the day (that is to say, on the side of the house where the sun is not shining at the time) and the whole of the evening, and then these little moths swarm in in their hundreds, attracted at once by the lights. I have seen them lying many deep all over the lamp-shade; in fact, I remember one evening when they kept coming in in such myriads that we were at our wits' end to know what to do, and the only remedy we could think of was to put out the lamp and go to bed.

Of the actively troublesome ones, of course, the mosquitoes stand first on the list. They are likewise amongst the first with which one becomes acquainted, for they seem to prefer attacking newcomers, persecuting them most unmercifully.

But quite the most sensational of our new experiences was finding a snake in our bedroom one evening just as we were going to bed. It was a coral snake too, which though a small one is highly venomous, its bite is deadly, so our feelings may be easily imagined. However, as its head was under the door, and its body the other side, I soon severed one from the other. We were not long in discovering that it was quite a common thing to find snakes in the garden, but, in case I should unin-

tentionally convey an exaggerated idea of the danger one always connects with the close proximity of snakes, I may remark that there are only a few kinds that attack humans first unless they are frightened.

Repulsive as these beasts are, they have one quality that is worth mentioning, and that is that if one is captured or killed, its mate will always come in search of it. In corroboration of this fact I was told of a gentleman, living in the country, who killed a snake one morning, and placed it just across a French window opening out of the morning-room, thinking to play a harmless joke on his wife, and presently he heard her scream out in affright. Although the screams continued, he only came to her in a very leisurely manner, believing that she was unduly startled at the sight of the dead snake, but found, when he did at last come to her assistance, that a live one was there too. It had evidently followed him, although he had not been aware of it.¹

There are various kinds of snakes in Brazil, some of which I have seen measuring between seven and eight feet in length. Fortunately they are not all venomous. Amongst the deadly ones, besides

¹ Since writing the above my attention has been called to a story by Mr. Jerome K. Jerome in his book *Novel Notes*, which is, I understand, founded on fact, but I claim priority of date for mine, as it was told to me, as a fact of recent occurrence, soon after my arrival in Brazil just over forty years ago. There is, moreover, this difference, that whereas in Mr. Jerome's story the joke ended fatally for the victim, in this one it resulted in nothing worse than a serious fright for both the perpetrator of the joke and his victim.

the coral snake already mentioned, are the Cascavel (Rattlesnake); the Giboia (Boa-constrictor), which although not poisonous, certainly ranks among the deadly ones; the Jararáca and the Surucucú. The hooded cobra, the terror of India, does not exist there—at any rate, I never heard of it. There are also water-snakes, some of which attain to the length of fifteen yards; they are said to be non-venomous, as are also certain bright green ones varying from a yard to about a yard and a half in length, which work great havoc in hen-roosts, for they are very fond of eggs and young chickens.

Before quitting Pernambuco I had an opportunity of making the acquaintance of a very destructive little creature, whose natural habitat is north of Brazil, and that was the Cupím, or white ant. It is the peculiarity of this diminutive insect to eat its way through wood of almost any thickness. It is said of it, in fact, that it will bring a house down by persistently boring at the woodwork in the roof, if, that is to say, precaution be not taken to choose a kind that it will not attack. Fortunately there are some kinds that are proof against it. My own experience of its powers of destructiveness, though less catastrophic, was quite annoying enough. I had, amongst my luggage when I left England, a trunk of inch-thick pine, and in it I had stored away the winter clothes I had with me when I embarked, also, I regret to add, a dress suit. When I was about to leave Pernambuco, and hauled out this box to repack it, I found, to my dismay, that the cupím had been at work upon it: it had eaten its way up to the top commencing at the bottom, and

worked its way up through my clothes. The coat of my evening suit had been folded in two, and now had two holes in the back about the size of a half-crown, one on each side of the seam, most symmetrical in position, but by no means pleasing to see. Upon lifting up the box I found I could put my finger through the bottom in some places where it had been bored through in a kind of lace-work, as easily as if it had been matchwood.

Upon comparing notes with friends on this subject we found that they had all suffered in various ways from the depredations of this formidable little termite. One lady told us that she and her whole family were startled one morning by a loud noise which seemed to come from the drawing-room, and when they went to see what was the matter, they found all the curtain-rods had come down. They had been gnawed through by the cupím.

CHAPTER II

Chief feature of Pernambuco is the trade in sugar and cotton—Way in which cotton is brought into the town—Fruit and fowls also brought into town on mule-back—Likewise charcoal—Fruit entirely new to us—Description of various kinds—Pine-apple—Mango—Banana—Was the enormous bunch of grapes mentioned as having been brought from Canaan by Joshua's spies really a bunch of bananas?—The guava—Brazilian housewife skilled in making fruit preserves—The younger women not so keen on acquiring skill in this homely art—Is it because the Brazilian woman is changing with the times?—Or, is it because household work is much more difficult to cope with now that slavery no longer exists in the country?—Used not to be at all uncommon to receive a gift of home-made preserves—The Araçá—The Cajú—The mango—The fig-tree—The wild fig-tree grows to an enormous size—The passion-flower fruit—The Jaboticaba—The Jack-fruit—The Jambo—The Mangaba—The Pitanga—The Sapotí—The Abacate—Some kinds too perishable to travel—Brazil nuts rarely seen except in the State of Pará where they grow—Fruit-bearing palms—Manner in which men climb the palm-trees—European fruits acclimatized there—Oranges—The best grow in Bahia—Origin of our word marmalade—Works in construction at the ports of Pará and Pernambuco—Perhaps when completed the fruit-trade may develop—At present Buenos Aires and Montevideo are the chief customers—The vine cultivated in the Italian Colonies with great success—Wine made there rather rough to the taste.

THE chief feature of Pernambuco at the time of our arrival there, as indeed it still is, was the trade in sugar and cotton, both articles being brought into the town from the distant plantations on horse and mule back. It was a common sight, during the season, to see these animals come trooping in,

one after the other, headed by one sometimes carrying a smaller load of cotton and a rider perched on top, reminding one, in a way, of a camel. I particularly remember one day seeing the horse (or mule, I do not recollect now which it was) stumble, and I fully expected to see the rider flung to the ground, instead of which he alighted very nimbly over the animal's head, coming down on his feet without losing hold of the reins.

Fruit and fowls were also brought into the town on horse or mule back, in baskets strapped, panier-fashion, one on each side of the animal. And one may likewise see charcoal brought to town in this way: it is packed in sacks of rather small circumference which are hung at the sides and slung over the back of the animal, piled up one over another and surmounted by a small boy. I have even seen articles of household furniture carried out of town in this manner.

The fruit, which grows in great variety and abundance, was, with the exception of oranges, entirely new to us, and most excellent in quality as well as delicious to the taste, the most noteworthy among them being the Abacaxi (pronounced abahcashee) and the Manga, or mango, as it is called in England.

The abacaxi is a very fine variety of pine-apple obtained from careful cultivation of the Ananáz, or wild pine-apple, which grows in great abundance in tropical Brazil, and is fairly plentiful in the temperate regions. Just to give an instance of the profusion with which the wild pine-apple grows, I may mention, *en passant*, that we had a wild pine-apple hedge in the garden of one of the houses

where we lived in Brazil, just as here, in England, one often has a blackberry hedge.

The cultivated variety attains to a great size, from eleven to twelve inches long. In Pernambuco they used to be sold at an insignificant price, even to foreigners about threepence or sixpence each, according to the size. I have seen much smaller ones here in London at 5s. apiece, very inferior in taste.

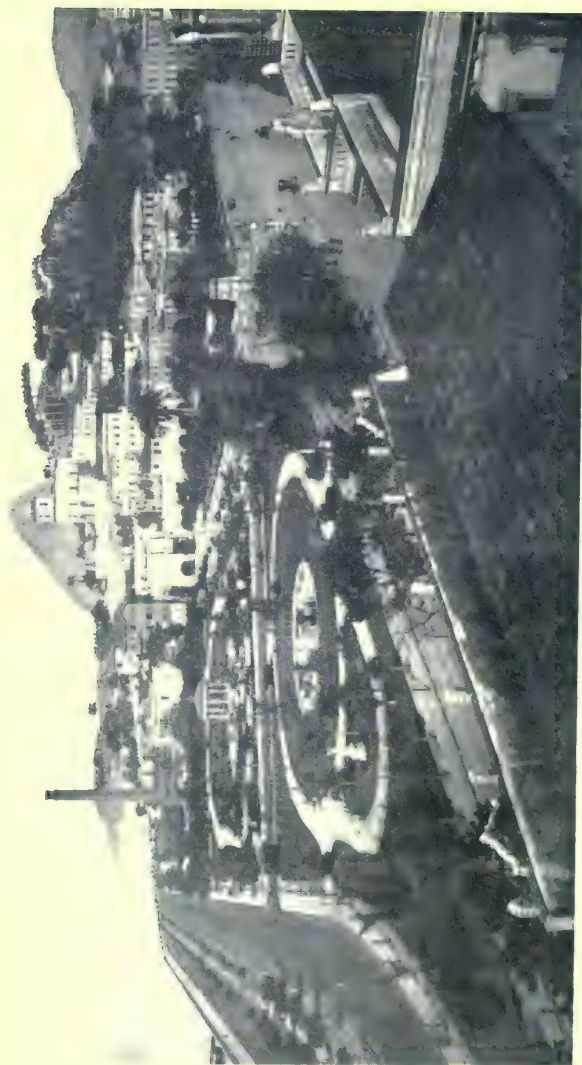
The banana, now so well known in England, grows in great abundance and variety. The wild kind is a bright reddish colour, but is not pleasant eating. The finest flavoured bananas are, I think (and I venture to say that most people who have had an opportunity of judging of the banana in its native country will agree with me) those grown in tropical regions. It is not possible, here in England, to have this fruit at its best, for it has to be gathered so long before it is ripe, in order to enable it to stand the long sea-voyage, that consequently it lacks the natural juice which renders it so luscious there. Although bananas are not eaten directly they are gathered, even in the land where they grow, but are left a few days to mature. The best way of doing this is to hang the whole bunch, covered up in a sack or with some straw, in a cool, dark place.

The different varieties of this fruit are distinguished by having another name added to the word banana, as, for example, banana maçã (apple-banana) for the rather short, fat kind, generally considered the best ; banana prata (silver banana or plate banana) and so on. The very large kind is not eaten in a

raw condition, but is cut into long, thin slices and fried, after which it is served up dusted over with sugar and powdered cinnamon. The banana-tree is very peculiar, inasmuch as it has no wood at all; the leaves are of an enormous length and correspondingly wide, and just unfurl as they grow up the side of the main trunk, which is full of sap. Each tree gives one bunch, and then dies. The bunches, called Cachos in Brazil, generally contain from one hundred to one hundred and twenty bananas, but are known to hold as many as three hundred sometimes. It occurred to us more than once to wonder whether the bunch of "grapes" brought back by the spies sent by Joshua to reconnoitre the Promised Land, and which was so heavy it required two men to carry it, was not really a bunch of bananas.

The Goiaba (guava) grows in all parts of the country, and is to be found in great abundance in the forests. It is an excellent fruit, and can be eaten freely without any fear of ill-effects, which cannot be said of all the fruit out there. The Melancia, or water-melon, for instance, is said to be responsible for an increase in the death-rate when it is in season. It is claimed by those who are fond of this, to me, very uninteresting fruit, that it is harmless in itself, but that if wine or any kind of spirit is taken immediately after eating it the fruit is converted into an indigestible mass in the stomach, and death results inevitably.

But, to return to the goiaba: there are two kinds, one with a reddish, or deep rose-coloured pulp, and the other with a white, or creamy-white



JARDIN DA GLORIA, ON THE BAY OF RIO.

pulp. A delicious and very wholesome preserve is made from this fruit, called Goiabada. It is done on a domestic scale in most households, and is also an important industry, some hundreds of tons being turned out annually in some places.

This leads me very naturally to mention that the Brazilian housewife is well skilled in the preparation of fruit preserves, and in the making of pastries and sweets of every kind. The ordinary kinds are to be found at the confectioners and pastrycooks, but the finer and more delicate sort, those requiring great care and patience in the production, are only to be seen (and tasted) in private houses, where they are the work of the ladies of the family, made under their direct supervision, very often by their own hands.

A great many Brazilian ladies pride themselves very much on this little domestic art, and seek to attain to excellence in it. But, perhaps I should speak in the Past Tense, for I notice that the younger generation are not so keen on striving after proficiency on these lines. Is it that in Brazil, as in the old world, women are changing with the times, and no longer look upon the home as the natural sphere in which to develop their talents? Or, is it because now that slavery no longer exists and the problem of domestic service is even more difficult in Brazil than it is here, they find the ordinary household duties quite sufficient for the day?

It used to be not at all an uncommon thing to receive a present, perhaps on a birthday, or some such festive occasion, of some of these delicious home-

made preserves, which would be brought to the house in a pair of "Compoteiras," the whole covered over with a fine, white cloth bordered with lace, or, sometimes, made entirely of lace.

A "Compoteira" is a glass vessel, something like a very large champagne glass in shape, but with a cover to it.

I make special mention of this graceful custom, as it may, alas, be one that is likely to pass away.

But to return to our fruit. The Araçá is very like the goiaba in taste and appearance, but much smaller, and not so successful in preserve-making.

The Cajú is highly esteemed for its medicinal properties, being reported a good purifier of the blood. It grows in profusion, especially in Pernambuco, where a kind of medicinal wine is prepared from it. The fruit is somewhat peculiar, being pear-shaped, the smaller end hanging down, and has a nut depending from it which resembles a monkey's head in profile. A very refreshing drink is made from the juice, which is decidedly acid. In private houses a delicious preserve is made from the fruit, in syrup—to my thinking, the most exquisite of its kind—and a kind of crystallized preserve is also made from it, but although it is exceedingly good, I do not think it compares with the kind which is preserved in syrup.

The Manga (English mango) grows luxuriantly in the tropical regions of Brazil, the two States most famed for it being Pernambuco and Bahia. The tree is large and very beautiful, and bears fruit plentifully. It is of Asiatic origin, but has now been acclimatized in Brazil for a very long time,

and thrives there perfectly. The fruit is one of the most delicious and succulent in the world, and is something between a pear and an apple in size and shape. The pulp is exceedingly juicy, but has a decided taste of turpentine, which, to the uninitiated might seem unpleasant, but I must say I never found it so—not even the first time I tasted it. To my fancy it is the fruit *par excellence*.

The fig-tree is another importation which has taken very kindly to the land, and grows there in great abundance. The purple figs especially grow to a great size.

The wild fig-tree is indigenous to the soil, and is very often of gigantic proportions. I have seen one myself so immense that under its wide spreading branches several families could picnic at the same time without overlapping, so to speak, and without disturbing the occupants of a hammock or two hanging here and there.

Besides the various kinds of fruit which I have already described, there are many more, which, at the risk of being tedious, I should like to enumerate, as they are quite unknown over here, and they all have some distinguishing mark or feature.

There is, for instance, the Maracujá with its beautiful passion-flower, so called from the fact that it bears seven dark purple patches resembling wounds, and also has marks which resemble the instruments of Our Saviour's Passion and Crucifixion.

The Jaboticaba, noticeable for the curious way in which it grows all along the branches, and even on the trunk of the tree, instead of depending from

a stem of any kind. This fruit is highly prized for its cool, refreshing juice, but it dyes the mouth, tongue and teeth purple, just as blackberries do here.

The Jaca (Jack-fruit), which is, I believe, of Asiatic origin, but perfectly acclimatized in Brazil. It grows to an enormous size—indeed I have never seen anything in fruit to equal it in size or weight. Some jacas will weigh from thirty to forty pounds. Cattle are very fond of it, but, as far as my own acquaintance with it goes, I may say that I think it more curious than appetizing. It grows on a short, thick stalk proceeding directly from the trunk of the tree. In shape it is something like a pumpkin.

The Jambo is about the size of a plum. It is more beautiful to look at than pleasant to eat, as it is highly aromatic; in fact, one feels as if one were eating some richly-perfumed pulp. The flower is small and dainty, but the scent is very pungent, and, when the tree is in full bloom, quite overpowering. The fruit is of a rich, creamy rose tint.

The Mangaba¹ is also about the size of a plum, and is much esteemed for making fruit-preserves.

The Pitanga is the fruit of a bushy shrub growing wild in various parts of Brazil. It is of a bright red colour, and about the size of a cherry, but with constrictions on its surface, as if to divide it into four or five parts. A most delicious jelly is made from it.

The Sapotí is a small fruit about the size of a

¹ I am informed that the mangaba is now found to yield rubber of excellent quality.

greengage plum, the skin is about the colour of a potato, and the flavour reminds one somewhat of vanilla. It is too delicate to stand the wear and tear of packing and transport, and is consequently only to be found, even in Brazil, in the regions where it grows.

The Abacate makes a delicious fruit salad with the addition of lemon-juice, but is also too perishable to travel far from its native soil.

Brazil nuts, so common in England, strange to say, are quite unknown in many parts of Brazil, although this, by the by, bears witness to the vast extent of the country. They grow abundantly in Pará, and are called Pará nuts; but, during the whole of the forty years I was in the country I never saw them but once, and that was because an Englishman to whom I had mentioned the subject sent for some purposely and had them brought to me.

Of the fruit-bearing palms the cocoa-nut is too well known to require description, but there is another kind which is very valuable, called Dendé: the nut is not quite so small, but is similar to the Brazil nut in shape; it affords a kind of oil which is highly prized, especially in the preparation of certain native dishes.

The way the men ascend these palm-trees—it can hardly be called climbing—is most ingenious and curious to watch, although somewhat difficult to describe. They bring a length of stout rope with which they make a circle round the tree, fastening the ends firmly together, but leaving enough slack to allow for their own person within it, with a

little to spare, so that they can sit on it with their feet planted against the trunk of the tree. In this way they soon work their way up to the top of the tallest tree.

Before I leave the subject of fruit I must also state that over and beyond the great varieties which are indigenous to the country a great quantity of European fruit has been successfully acclimatized, such as the pear, the peach, the apricot, the plum and the apple. Neither must I omit to mention that oranges grow well in all the States of Brazil, but I unhesitatingly give the preference to those grown in that portion of the country which lies within the Tropics, particularly to those grown in Bahia, which State is, indeed, famed for its oranges. The best are those known as Laranjas de Umbigo : they are very large, and have a peculiar depression at the point opposite the stalk-end, which has evidently given rise to the name, i.e., umbilical oranges. Needless to say, however, there are many other kinds.

It may not be generally known here that we get our word marmalade from the Portuguese Marmelada, which is merely quince preserve. This fruit, i.e., the quince, grows in boundless profusion in Brazil, as indeed almost every kind of fruit does. The immense pity about it being that great quantities are allowed to fall to the ground there to lie until they rot.

It is to be hoped that when the works now in course of construction at Pará and Pernambuco—the two ports nearest to Europe—are completed greater facilities will be afforded for the exportation



THE PUBLIC GARDENS, PARÁ.

From "Brazil in 1912."

of fruit from Brazil to the countries of the old world. At present the export trade in fruit is chiefly—indeed, I believe exclusively—directed to Buenos Aires and Montevideo, the former being a good customer.

I notice that I have not placed it on record here that the vine is being cultivated in the southern States, namely, São Paulo, Santa Catharina and Rio Grande do Sul. In the last-named State it is being cultivated on a large scale in the Italian Colonies, where it is, in fact, the principal industry. There is a vine in the Colony of Caxias (pronounced Casheeas) which is about eighteen years old, and has already produced as much as 1,900 kilogrammes of grapes in one year, or more than 37 cwt. I may say, however, that the wine made from the South American grape is decidedly rough to the palate. There is a very fine vineyard at a place called Alegrete which produces what is generally considered to be the best wine made in the State of Rio Grande do Sul. Both the vineyard and its owner are well known to me, and I know that the successful results achieved there are only the well merited reward of much industry and patient perseverance.

CHAPTER III

Sugar and cotton the staple industries of Pernambuco—Sugar-cane introduced by the Portuguese—First sugar-mill set up in Brazil—Principal sugar-producing States lie within the Torrid Zone—Pernambuco the chief sugar-market of Brazil—The first sugar-mill set up there in 1534—The sugar-cane attains to a great height—Brazil consumes a great proportion of its own sugar—Rum distilled from the syrup—This is cheap—But the sugar itself is dearer in Brazil than in England—It is finer in quality and flavour—Cotton the other chief industry of Pernambuco—It is certain that it already existed in South America previously to the arrival of Europeans—The Indians were acquainted with it—Two great varieties—Influence of climate—All cotton-plants do not require the same climate—Soil is also important—The manner in which the soil should be prepared for sowing cotton-seed—Not always adopted in Brazil—Life of cotton-plant in the north—Crops or harvests in the north and in the south—Cotton more productive when grown on the plains than on the hills—But more exposed to moisture—Time for sowing—This plant is really at its best in the northern States—In the north the soil is said to yield more than in North America—Three harvests—Method of treating the plant after the third harvest or crop—Quantity of fibre varies—Quality is in inverse ratio to quantity—Herbaceous plant produces more than the arborescent—But the arborescent gives longer staple cotton—Nevertheless it is the herbaceous that is most widely cultivated—Reason for this—Culture of cotton-plant only increased to any extent since 1860—American Civil War gave great impetus to this industry—Shortage in North American markets turned attention of buyers to South America—Principal kinds cultivated—Help and encouragement lent by two national associations—Also by some of the State Governments—All the cotton grown in the north is of excellent quality—In some States the supply is not equal to the demand—Many cotton-mills—All prosperous—Dividends of 20 per cent., 30 per cent., and over—Brazil imports cotton goods to the value of some millions per annum

STAPLE INDUSTRIES OF PERNAMBUCO 29

—Extraction of oil—Manufacture of oil-cake as food for cattle only done on a very small scale.

AS I mentioned in the previous chapter, the staple industries of Pernambuco are its sugar and cotton.

The sugar-cane was introduced into Brazil in the early years of its colonization by the Portuguese. It was brought from the island of Madeira, where it had been cultivated to a considerable extent for some time past.

The first sugar-mill was established at a place called São Vicente in the State of São Paulo, followed very shortly by another in Pernambuco. The other sugar-producing States are Rio de Janeiro, Sergipe, Alagoas, Bahia and Parahyba, by which I mean that it is cultivated on a large scale in these States. It grows in all the States encompassed by the Torrid Zone.

Pernambuco, however, is the chief sugar market of Brazil, and produces by far the greatest quantity. The first manufactory (called, locally, Engenho) to commence working in Pernambuco was set up in the year 1534 near Olinda, the former capital of the State.

Although this is such an old industry, the methods employed in its pursuit are very primitive and out of date, and call urgently for mechanical improvements which, if adopted, would speedily bring about practical results in the shape of an increase in the produce and, proportionately, in the profits.

The sugar-cane will sometimes attain to a height of twenty-six feet or more. That grown from seed, needless to say, takes longer to ripen than that

grown from cuttings. From twelve to eighteen months is the normal length of time taken by the cane to ripen into a suitable condition for crushing in the mills.

Brazil consumes a great amount of its own sugar, the annual consumption averaging over three thousand tons.

Much rum is distilled from the syrup after the cane is crushed, and is called Canna (cane), Canninha (little cane), or Cachaça, according to the locality. I have never heard the derivation, or explanation, of this latter term. In some places it is called Paraty, from the name of the place where it is made. Alcohol, or spirits of wine, is also distilled from the syrup.

The rum and alcohol which the sugar-cane yields are very cheap, but the sugar itself, although native-grown, is much dearer to buy than it is here in England. It is only just to add, however, that it is much finer in flavour and has greater sweetening properties than the sugar generally sold in Europe.

Cotton is the other principal commodity produced in Pernambuco. It is certain that a species of cotton-plant existed in South America at the time of its discovery by the Spaniards and Portuguese. The Indians called it Maniou, and were in the habit of using its fibres to make their hammocks.

Conditions of climate and soil, as well as methods of culture, greatly affect this plant, of which there are two great varieties, namely, the Herbaceous and the Arborescent, the former being an annual, and the latter of longer duration. It may be added that the herbaceous cotton-plant may become

arborescent and vice versâ, according to the climatic influences to which it is subjected.

The different varieties do not all require a similar climate: the arborescent plant needs a high temperature, whilst the herbaceous kind will content itself with a low temperature, provided it is not subjected to much variation.

It is actually cultivated within the limits of 36° north latitude and 30° south of the Equator.

Next to climate, the soil is the most important factor in the culture of the cotton-plant.

On dry ground, or—going to the opposite extreme—on excessively moist ground, the growth of this plant is slow and its yield small. The soil which suits it best is fresh alluvion, or land reclaimed from forest land, and likewise silicious soil. It will do well on any land, except that which contains a large proportion of clay.

As a preliminary to sowing cotton-seed the land is first sown with Indian corn, or some other cereal, or even French beans, as this is considered to render it more fit to grow the cotton-plant. The lighter the soil, the larger the cotton crop. In most parts of Brazil, however, they content themselves with cutting down the vegetation which covers the ground destined for a cotton plantation, and setting fire to it, after which the seed is sown. This germinates in about six to eight days, and when it reaches a height of about thirty inches, it is lopped to make it grow more vigorously. It is regrettable to have to state that regular weeding-out, although exceedingly beneficial to the plantations, is very generally neglected in Brazil.

In the north the arborescent plant lives eight years, and gives its last crop in nine months' time. In the same region the herbaceous plant (both the annual and the biennial varieties) begins to yield at periods varying from the third to the ninth month. In the southern States the first harvest of the arborescent plant can only take place in twelve months' time at the earliest date.

In the north, again, the cotton plantations are laid out indiscriminately on the plains or on the hills. The plant grown on the plains is the more productive of the two, but, on the other hand, it suffers more from excess of moisture when the rains are heavy and continuous. In the south the arborescent variety has to be sown as early in the season as possible, to prevent the cold from doing damage and arresting the development of the pods. The herbaceous variety can be planted up to the end of October, as it comes to fruition earlier than the first named. In the southern regions of Brazil the cotton harvest always begins in April or May.

Being really a tropical plant, it is naturally at its best in the northern States of Brazil, where its culture gives the most advantageous results. In these regions the soil is said to yield more, acre for acre, than in the United States of North America, or any other great cotton-producing country.

Some varieties of the cotton-plant will yield a crop within three months from the date of sowing, but the usual period of development is from six to nine months.

There are three separate harvests, viz., the first, that of the lower capsules, or pods ; the second, that

of the pods lying halfway up the shrub ; and the third, that of the upper capsules. When this is finished the plant is pollarded to within a short distance of the ground, and, if it is of the arborescent kind, it will yield seven or eight crops after that.

The quantity of fibre found in the pods is very variable : generally speaking, however, the quality is in the inverse ratio to the quantity, so that the smaller the yield, the better the cotton.

The herbaceous plant produces much more than the arborescent, but, on the other hand, the latter gives longer staple cotton. Notwithstanding the undoubted superiority of the long staple cotton, it is the herbaceous, or short staple cotton-plant, that is most widely cultivated in Brazil, especially in the State of São Paulo and further south. One reason for this being that it occupies less space ; it also yields more quickly and gives less trouble than the other kind, and, although the fibre is shorter, it is very supple and lustrous, both of which qualities recommend it for certain wares.

Although this useful plant has been cultivated in Brazil for a very long time, it is only since the year 1860 that its cultivation has been increased to any considerable extent. A great impetus was given to it during the Civil War in North America, when the shortage in the United States markets caused buyers to turn their attention to the southern continent.

The principal kinds cultivated in the country are the following : the *Gossipium barbadense*, Lin., the *Gossipium hirsutum*, Lin., the *Gossipium religiosum*, Lin., the *Gossipium Peruvianum*, Lin., the

Gossipium pubescens, and numerous varieties of all these kinds. Of the kinds which have been acclimatized (in addition to those already found growing there), mention should be made of the "Sea-island," which is valued so highly.

The arborescent kinds and varieties are mostly cultivated in the north of Brazil, especially the *Gossipium Peruvianum*, which, as its name implies, came originally across the Andes from Peru. In the south the herbaceous kinds are the more common.

For some years past the Sociedade Nacional de Agricultura (National Agricultural Society) has been doing its best to introduce new varieties into the country besides those above mentioned, and the Society for the encouragement of Agriculture in Pernambuco has latterly been following this excellent example.

Besides the help and encouragement given by these two associations, the Governments of the States of Bahia and São Paulo are very generous in distributing the best kind of seed to the agriculturists.

All the cotton grown in the northern States is of excellent quality, especially that which comes from Maranhão, which has already obtained several awards at various exhibitions.

After it is picked the cotton is put into separating machines, which remove the fibre from the seed. This operation is a most important one, as, if any of the seed is allowed to remain adhering to the fibre, it will get crushed when the latter is packed for export, and will stain it, thus very materially reducing its market value.

There are many cotton mills at work in Brazil, and in some of the States the supply is unequal to the demand, putting aside the question of exporting it to foreign markets. The mills are all prospering, some paying dividends of from twenty to thirty per cent. and even more, and yet Brazil imports cotton goods to the value of some million pounds sterling per annum. What a field for agricultural and industrial enterprise is still open there !

Another point worth noting is that, although the extraction of the oil from the seed and the manufacture of oil-cake as a food for cattle is an important and lucrative industry in the United States of North America, it is only done on a very insignificant scale in Brazil, indeed very few factories of this kind exist there as yet.

CHAPTER IV

Brazil one of the largest countries in the world—Actual extent of territory—Superficial area of State of Amazonas—Comparison with other countries—Population in 1907—Increasing rapidly—It has trebled in the State of São Paulo during the last ten years—It does not all lie within the Tropics—Its character—Nature's gifts bestowed with almost equal profusion almost all over it—It is well wooded and well watered—Has a long coast-line—Providence has endowed it with such good things as other nations have had to struggle to acquire—Wide range of latitude—Capable of producing sufficient for the wants of great multitudes—Pre-eminent amongst lands endowed with natural beauty—Bahia the old capital—The first portion to be discovered by the Portuguese—Discovery of Brazil—Some say it was accidental—Pedro Alvares Cabral takes possession in the name of the king of Portugal—The Portuguese indifferent to their new possession at first—Enervating effect upon a nation of a sudden access of wealth—Study of conquest of India by the Portuguese and of Mexico and Peru by the Spaniards—Race-degeneracy follows upon self-indulgence—Invigorating effect of labour and industry—Work evidently a prime necessity with the human race—Brazil was immensely rich in natural resources—But they were in a crude state—Required development at the hands of man—In India the Portuguese found cultivated wealth ready to be seized—Their interest in Brazil was languid by comparison—Colonization proceeded slowly at first—Prince Regent of Portugal and royal family embark for Brazil in 1807—They intend to go to Rio de Janeiro—Stress of weather compels them to put in to Bahia harbour—The people offer to build a palace—The Regent refuses because the harbour of Bahia was not readily defensible—Continues his voyage to Rio de Janeiro—Bahia is not so fine as Rio de Janeiro—Very pleasing panorama—Old and new parts of the city—Cuisine—Fish—A regulation worth noting—The fishermen put out to sea on rafts called *Jangadas*—Some



SCENE IN THE STATE OF PARANA.

From "Brazil in 1912."



THE RIO DO PEIXE, IN SANTA CATHARINA.

From "Brazil in 1912."

are careless about carrying lights at night—Consequently they get run down by passing liners.

ALTHOUGH not the greatest, Brazil is one of the largest countries in the world : it is the largest inhabited by the Latin race, and the second largest of the new world (or the Western Hemisphere), coming next, in territorial extent, to the United States of North America.

The actual extent of its territory is estimated at 8,524,777 square kilometres, or 3,291,416 square miles (according to the most recent available statistics), being nearly half, or, to be more exact, a little more than five-elevenths of the entire continental extent of South America, the remaining six-elevenths going to make twelve countries, namely, the nine Republics of Uruguay, Argentina, Paraguay, Chili, Bolivia, Peru, Ecuador, Colombia and Venezuela, and the three Guianas : British, French and Dutch.

Only Russia, China and the United States of North America are of greater extent than Brazil. It is fourteen times the size of France, and nearly three hundred times that of Belgium. Although Brazil covers such a vast extent of territory, its whole population in 1907 (the date of the last census) was just under 20,000,000, or less than half that of the British Isles, which could, geographically speaking, easily be lost in some of its States, for that of Amazonas, to mention one only, is calculated to be some 1,877,520 square kilometres in superficial area. If the population of the country were equal in density to that of Belgium it would outnumber the entire population of the globe at the present time. Even were it only equal to that of Portugal, it would average

at least 400,000,000. Of the nations of Latin origin, only France and Italy have a greater number of inhabitants, according to the latest statistics ; Spain contains no more, possibly fewer. I am, of course, speaking of the actual population of these countries, not of their number of inhabitants to the square mile. In the State of São Paulo, however, the population has trebled during the last ten years, and it is increasing rapidly in other States too.

It may, perhaps, come as a surprise to some people to learn that the whole of the country does not lie in the Tropics, for I believe this is generally thought to be the case. As a matter of fact, Brazil stretches from 5° N. to 34° S. lat., and therefore its southernmost States are within the Temperate Zone.

Notwithstanding its great superficial area, Brazil is fairly homogeneous in character. Nature's most bounteous gifts have been distributed all over it with an almost equally lavish hand. It is well wooded and well watered. Well situated and possessed of a long line of sea-coast which renders it easily accessible by water. The Brazilian littoral, or sea-board, is about 5,000 miles in length, and is punctuated by numerous bays and ports offering friendly harbour to visitors.

Providence has bestowed on this highly-favoured land natural gifts so excellent in quality, so plentiful in quantity and so infinite in variety as to make it the happy possessor of such good things as nations and races have fought and struggled to acquire, or had to overcome untold difficulties to achieve.

The range of latitude is so great that people of almost any nationality can find a climate to suit

them within its borders, whilst it is capable of producing sufficient food to supply the wants of vast multitudes. It stands pre-eminent amongst those lands endowed with all the scenic beauty of wooded mountain and sequestered valley : all the charm of rising hill-top and falling waters. Here the softest and most delicate ferns and mosses line the walls of some cool grotto, there a forbidding-looking cactus-hedge lends additional ferocity to a rugged ascent. Here a rippling stream winds its peaceful way in and out between low, green-clad banks ; there a giant cascade pours its huge volume of water with fierce impetus down the side of some dizzy precipice, dashing against many a jutting rock, and rebounding into the clear air in glittering crystals and splinters of iridescent hue ; anon a mighty river sweeps along its sinuous course carrying on its surging waters detached masses of broken verdure, islets of shrub and undergrowth torn from their roots by its onward rush.

Bahia, the old capital of the country, was the first portion thereof to be discovered and peopled by the Portuguese, in the early years of the sixteenth century.

It is claimed by some authorities that Vicente Yañes Pinzon, a Castilian navigator and a friend of Christopher Columbus, was the first European to set foot in Brazil, on the coast of Pernambuco, on the 28th January, 1500, whence he proceeded along the coast northwards, as far as the Orinoco. Be that as it may, the Portuguese navigator, Pedro Alvares Cabral, was the first to take possession of the land. This he did, formally, in the name of

the king of Portugal, Dom Manuel I, on the 3rd May, 1500.

The discovery of Brazil was attended with as much romance and stirring adventure as any other part of either North or South America. By some historians and chroniclers it is asserted that the discovery was an accident : one of the " Caravellas " (caravels, or sailing-vessels), belonging to the king of Portugal, was on its way to India, and, in order to avoid delay by calms on the west coast of Africa, put out to sea so far that they were able to descry land on the other side of the Atlantic. They at once made for it, and took possession in the name of their sovereign.

Whether the discovery was accidental, or whether Cabral deviated from his course intentionally in the hope of finding yet another country in the new world teeming with cultivated wealth and finely wrought gold ready to hand, such as had been the lot of Cortez in Mexico, and Pizarro in the land of the Incas, is not certain, but, at all events, he did discover the land and take possession of it, giving it the name of Vera Cruz, or True Cross,¹ after which

¹ The name of Vera Cruz was given in commemoration of the date of the first Mass to be celebrated there by Fr. Henrique de Coimbra, on the 3rd May, the day set apart by the Church to be observed as the anniversary of the finding of the True Cross.

NOTE.—As I write the news reaches me from Bahia that the first church erected there by the Portuguese, and also the house that was occupied by Thomé de Souza, the first Governor sent out by the king of Portugal, Dom João III, have both been pulled down, which, if not an act of vandalism, is, at least, a thoughtless one, judged from a historical point of view.

he continued his voyage to India, first, however, sending a vessel back to Portugal, under the command of Gaspar de Lemos, to inform the king of what he had done, and also leaving two convicts there, one of whom acted as interpreter for the Portuguese later on.

What is certain is that the Portuguese, dazzled as they were at that time by the limitless wealth and luxury of their Indian Empire, did not pay much attention or attach due importance to the discovery of this new land, which, under capable administration, might have become a source of equally vast wealth.

One cannot help pausing here to wonder what would have been the position—politically, financially and commercially speaking—of Brazil at this present time, had the Portuguese navigators come to it full of that vigour and activity which were their national characteristics in the days when they first sallied forth across unknown waters to seek for the kingdom of Prester John (or Prestes João), and found the fabulous riches of India lying there ready for them to seize upon.

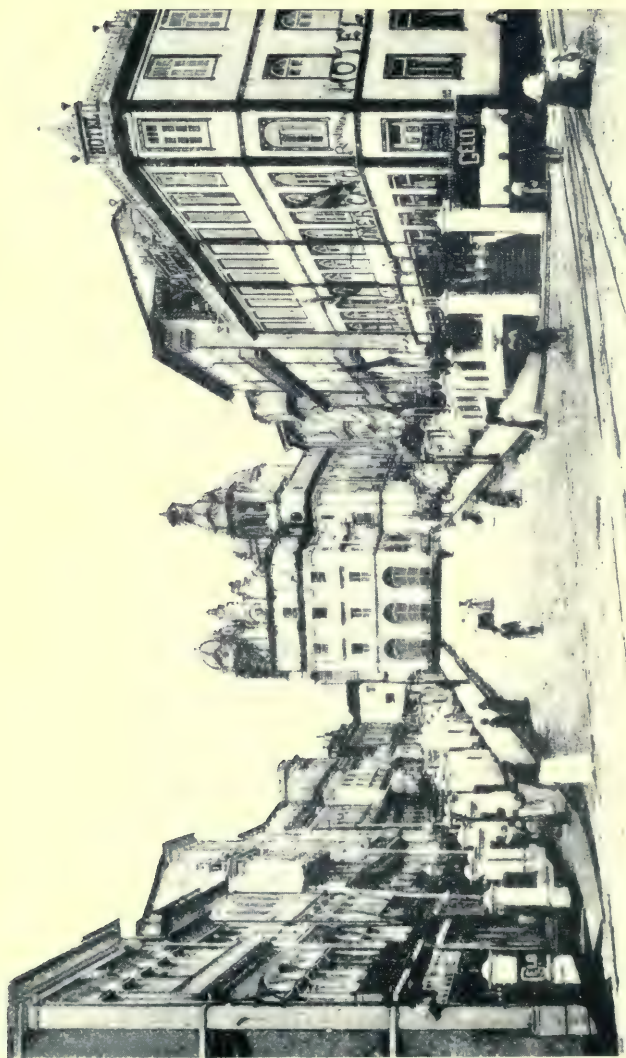
The enervating effect upon a nation of a sudden access of splendour and wealth cannot be better exemplified than by a study of the conquest of India by the Portuguese, and that of Mexico and Peru by the Spaniards. When one compares the ease and self-indulgence that followed closely upon the heels of these discoveries and conquests and the race-degeneracy that resulted therefrom with a swiftness almost startling to see, when one compares this with the invigorating effect of the years of toilsome labour

and patient industry which the English had to put in the field before they were able to evolve the great British Empire of which we are all so proud to-day, one cannot help reading therein a great object lesson in the primordial necessity in humankind of a strong incentive to work. I do not say my fellow-countrymen of the present day are as labour-loving as I remember them in the days of my youth ; but, if we English are becoming degenerate and effeminate, the process of decay has taken much longer to show itself with us. The Spaniards and Portuguese fell like a plumb-line from the heights of untold wealth and power to the depths of absolute inertia.

It was when they were already spoilt by the ease and rapidity with which they had annexed the treasures of India that the Portuguese became the masters of Brazil. Here, however, rich and varied as were the natural resources of the country, they were in a crude state, awaiting development at the hands of man. There were no scented gardens laid out with the choicest flowers to delight the eye and nostril ; no magnificent palaces and stately temples full of priceless vessels of gold, or silver and precious stones fashioned into shape by skilled workmen standing ready to satisfy their dreams of avarice ; no costly silks already woven and richly embroidered ready for them to carry off as wearing apparel. Their interest in their new possession was consequently but languid, and the work of colonization proceeded slowly and fitfully at first.

Later on, in 1807, when Napoleon's army was devastating Portugal, Brazil was to serve as a harbour of refuge to the Portuguese royal family. The





CHURCH OF S. BENTO, BAHIA.

Prince Regent¹ embarked on a man-of-war with the other members of the reigning family, and set sail from the Tagus on the 29th November, escorted by some English gunboats, intending to go to Rio de Janeiro.² The heavy weather they experienced, however, obliged some of the vessels of this squadron, including the flagship with the Regent on board, to put in to Bahia harbour, where they anchored on the 22nd February, 1808.

The people of Bahia offered to build a palace for the Prince if he would consent to make that his place of residence, but he refused, on the plea that the entrance to the bay was not sufficiently defensible, and continued his journey to Rio de Janeiro, where he arrived on the 7th March of the same year.

Although not so fine as Rio de Janeiro, Bahia presents a very pleasing panorama as one approaches it from the sea, the bay forming a crescent with houses dotted along it, almost from horn to horn. The lower (and the old) part of the city is far from attractive in appearance, many of its streets being narrow and inconvenient and only paved with cobble-stones,³ but the upper portion of the town, named Victoria, is much better and more up-to-date. Communication between the old and the new parts

¹ The Infante, Dom João, who on the death of his mother, Dona Maria I, on the 21st March, 1816, became king, under the title of Dom João VI. Previously to this, on the 16th December, 1815, Brazil had been raised to the category of a kingdom.

² The capital had already been removed from Bahia to Rio de Janeiro in 1763.

³ Many of the old streets are being pulled down, and rebuilt now (1913), which is the cause of the regrettable act of destruction referred to in the footnote on page 40.

of the city is achieved by means of an hydraulic lift and two inclined planes, or funicular railways.

Bahia claims to possess the best cooks in the country, and its cuisine is quite distinct in character from that of the other States. Two dishes on the preparation of which they pride themselves are Vatapá and Escabeche. Both are highly seasoned, and have fish for their foundation.

! And speaking of fish, I may mention that this is good and very plentiful all over Brazil, the best kinds being the Dourado, or golden fish (not to be confused with goldfish), so called on account of its golden scales—it is to be found both in salt and in fresh water, and is not unlike salmon; the Piaba, also a large fish, the flesh of which is very fine, firm and white; the Pintado, so called because of the spots on its scales. This latter is a smaller fish, about the size of a herring, but more like mackerel in appearance.

One of the regulations worth noticing, in this connexion, is that fish is not sold after a certain hour (if I remember rightly, after 7 a.m. in the summer, and after 8 a.m. in the winter in the northern States, and after 8 a.m. in the summer and 9 a.m. in the winter in the southern States). It is a sight to watch the poor people crowding into the fish-markets there to carry away all the fish that remains unsold when the time is up, much as one sees poor children here waiting outside bakers' shops on a Saturday afternoon. Needless to say, the regulation just referred to is because fish will not keep in good condition for very long in the intense heat.

Fish, consequently, is the staple food of the poor in those regions which lie within the Tropics.

The fishermen are bold and daring : they go right out to sea, and remain there all night, on *jangadas*, which are nothing more than narrow rafts with a mast to carry a sail. Some of them boast of a seat, firmly fixed to them, some have not even that. Such is their courage, or recklessness, that they often omit to provide themselves with a light, and consequently more than one has been run down in the night by ocean steamers, for they go far out to sea in the pursuit of their calling.

CHAPTER V

Original name of the country was Vera Cruz—Why it was changed to Brazil—Brazil-wood grows there in abundance—Wood and timber of many kinds grow there—Collections of specimens possessed by Brazilian friends of mine—Good class wood used for firing in the interior of the country—List of names of various kinds with specific gravity—Cabinet-makers find some qualities very hard—Kinds that are commonly used—Some are valuable for building and construction purposes—Experiments made to try the power of resistance to pressure—Brazil-wood offers the greatest resistance—Pau-ferro is of greater density—Constant felling of timber without corresponding planting—This is not only a possible economic evil for the future—But has already had a noticeable effect on the climate—Rainfall diminishing in regions where timber has been cut down in large quantities—Droughts out there are grievous visitations—Difficulties of doing much business with timber—Expense of transport very high—Freight to Europe also high—But timber is so plentiful and so good as to warrant an effort being made to overcome these difficulties—Result must prove successful ultimately.

THE name of Brazil was, as I have already mentioned in the preceding chapter, Vera Cruz, but was soon changed to the one it now bears, on account of the great quantity of Brazil-wood found growing there.

Brazil, or Brasil, as it is customary to spell it in its own country, comes from the Portuguese word *brasa*, a live coal, and the wood which later on gave its name to the country is of a reddish colour, not unlike a live coal or ember.

Speaking of wood, reminds me that this is a subject well deserving a separate chapter to itself, for I am sure that very few people in Europe can have any conception of the great variety and abundance of timber that grows in the immense forests in this country.

On two distinct occasions Brazilian friends of mine have shown me their quite extensive collections of samples of wood, nicely cut, planed and polished, all of remarkably fine quality. Yet one of these gentlemen told me, many years ago, that on the estate owned by his father-in-law, far away in the interior, much of it, even that of the better kinds, was used for firing in the production of sugar from the sugar-cane.

Although one of these collections numbered more than a hundred different specimens, they represented only a few of the many kinds to be found in the forests. A minute account of all these varieties might easily fill an entire book. I will therefore content myself with endeavouring to give a summary description of the kinds most commonly in use out there.

Amongst those especially deserving of note are :—

Aroeira	with a specific gravity of			1·219
Barba-timão	„	„	„	1·275
Beribá	„	„	„	1·310
Canella sassafras	„	„	„	1·080
Cocão	„	„	„	1·153
Curunilha	„	„	„	1·118
Guaraúna	„	„	„	1·164
Ipé-tabaco	„	„	„	1·048
Jacarandá-rosa	„	„	„	1·196
Páu-Brazil	„	„	„	1·185

Páu-ferro	with a specific gravity of	1.270
Vatinga	„ „ „	1.054

I am told that cabinet-makers find some of the wood extremely difficult to work with, on account of its excessive hardness, especially Páu-ferro (literally iron-wood).

Jacarandá, of which there are three varieties, is highly-prized in cabinet work, however. Of these three kinds, one is very well known here in England under the name of rosewood. The second variety is in two distinct shades of brown, one quite dark, and the other, of a yellowish tint, the markings occur in a very irregular manner. The third is decidedly black, like ebony, though quite distinct from it. It is much sought after by cabinet-makers for particular kinds of work.

Besides the varieties mentioned in the foregoing list, there are many others which, although lighter than water, are yet exceedingly hard, dense, and heavy, as will readily be seen from the following table :—

Angico	with a specific gravity of	0.907
Angico dos montes	„ „ „	0.986
Araçá	„ „ „	0.997
Batinga	„ „ „	0.997
Cabriuva	„ „ „	0.809
Canella preta	„ „ „	0.877
Cangerana	„ „ „	0.824
Camboatá	„ „ „	0.833
Camboim	„ „ „	0.828
Capororóca	„ „ „	0.829
Cambuy	„ „ „	0.772
Cedro (Cedar)	„ „ „	0.638
Cannela (Cinnamon)	„ „ „	0.572
Caróba	„ „ „	0.570

Grapiapunha	with a specific gravity of	0·855
Guabiroba	„ „ „	0·747
Ingá-assú	„ „ „	0·647
Ipé-una	„ „ „	0·785
Jacarandá-cabiuna	„ „ „	0·872
Louro	„ „ „	0·923
Pequiá	„ „ „	0·847
Peroba amarello	„ „ „	0·794
Peroba rosa	„ „ „	0·929
Tajuba	„ „ „	0·958
Tatajuba	„ „ „	0·846
Taruman	„ „ „	0·771
Vinhatico	„ „ „	0·667

Of all these, Louro is perhaps the most commonly used for cabinet-work, furniture, and so on. It is of a rather light shade of brown, but has no varied grain, although it is pleasing to the eye. There is another kind, not so commonly known, which is black, or nearly so.

Peroba is another kind which works up handsomely for furniture, and is consequently highly esteemed, although in this, as in many other things, there are fashions and fancies, and the same things or materials are not always in vogue, notwithstanding that their good qualities do not change with changing fancies. There are two varieties of this wood: Peroba amarello, or yellow peroba, and Peroba rosa, or rose-coloured. The latter is rather like a light mahogany, and is of a very pleasing appearance.

The kinds most in use for ordinary purposes are: first, Cedro, or cedar, after which follow Vinhatico and Cannela. Of these two, there are several varieties, all very useful and serviceable. Caróba and Cabriuva are likewise very generally in use.

Angico and some kinds of Cannela are very valuable for building and construction purposes.

Páu-campeche is sufficiently well known in Europe, under its other name of logwood, to dispense with any comment.

Some experiments were made a little while ago with various qualities of timber grown in Brazil, in order to test their resistance to a crushing weight, and Páu-Brazil, or Brazil-wood, was found to offer the greatest resistance to the pressure brought to bear upon it, although Páu-ferro is of greater density, the variation between the two being represented by the figures 1.361 and 0.951.

Whilst on the subject of timber, it will not come amiss to remark upon what is now an increasingly serious matter, and one that will affect future generations, and that is, the constant felling of timber without any corresponding planting. This is not only a possible economic evil as regards the future, but is already beginning to be felt even now, inasmuch as certain modifications of climate have already become noticeable, the rainfall too being much less in some places than formerly. Droughts, which are exceedingly grievous visitations, are also becoming more frequent in those districts where timber has been cut down to a great extent.

Looking at the question of timber from the point of view of commercial enterprise, it is regrettable to have to state that under the existing conditions the difficulties and expense of transport to the various ports of embarkation are so great, and the freights to Europe so high, that no margin is left for profit, except on the finest kinds. On the

other hand, the supply is so plentiful and so excellent that it seems to suggest that perseverance in contending with the difficulty might bring about an ultimate reward which would more than compensate for the effort.

CHAPTER VI

The national type—It is composed of three elements—The Portuguese—The American aboriginal—The African—The Portuguese government encouraged intermarriage with the Indians—Story of an Indian woman who was baptised in Europe and had Catherine de Medici for her godmother—Story of a Portuguese adventurer who was wrecked on the coast of Brazil—How he escaped death at the hands of the savages—He returns to Europe on a French ship later on—An Indian girl follows the vessel by swimming and is drowned—Types of South American Indians—Some of the tribes render service to the Portuguese—Story of a chief who had rendered signal services to the governor but was incensed at being reproved for lack of courtesy—Fierce hostility of some tribes—Some were cannibals—Fate of first Bishop of Brazil—Old Indian woman asks Jesuit Father to get her the hand of a boy—Experiment made by young married lady to train an Indian girl as a nursemaid—Indians amenable to kindly treatment on the whole—They fiercely resented any interference with their liberty—Cruelty and oppression in those days probably did not exceed what has occurred in the present day in another part of South America—The Guarany tribe—The Mundurucús—The Bororós—The Guatós—The Guaycurús—The Carayas—The Coroados—The Negroes—Marcilio Dias—Henrique Dias—The king of Portugal issues a decree in 1731 declaring that colour is no bar to office under the crown—Dom Pedro II bestows titles of nobility on some—Their position very different from what it is in North America—Story of the Visconde de Jequitinhonha—The princess Isabel dances with a coloured man at one of the court balls—The Baron de Cotegipe—A great leader of the old Conservative party—His high character—A very picturesque type often seen in Brazil—The Portuguese—Their history.

FOR the formation of the national type, three elements have been *mis à contribution* : the Portuguese, the American aboriginal, and the African

negro. The intermingling of these three races has produced the *mestiço* (Spanish *mestizo*), which type constitutes probably more or less half of the native population. The offspring of the white race with the Indian are called *Mamelucos*, more popularly designated *Caboclos*.

History records that the Portuguese government, like the Spanish, recognizing the superior qualities of some of the indigenous races of South America, not only permitted, but encouraged intermarriage with them, and miscegenation seems to have become the rule rather than the exception. The Portuguese government, indeed, issued a decree dated 4th April, 1755, declaring that vassals of the kingdom of Portugal marrying Indian women should in nowise be deemed to be dishonoured or degraded thereby. As an illustration of this, I may mention that more than one Indian girl who was converted to the Christian Faith in order to marry a Portuguese, had for sponsor a member of the royal family, and the Indian wife of Diogo Alvares, the first Portuguese to take to wife an Indian woman, had no less a personage for her godmother than Catherine de Medici.

The story, which perhaps I may pause to give here, is that Diogo Alvares, a Portuguese adventurer, left his native land with several of his boon companions to seek for better fortune elsewhere. They were wrecked off the coast of Brazil, and all except himself fell victims to the cannibal tribe amongst whom they had been cast, Alvares only escaping by the timely use of a gun, which, being entirely unknown to them, inspired the savages

with a kind of supernatural terror, and they gave him the name of Caramurú, or Man-of-Fire. He was, naturally, not slow to take due advantage of the impression he had thus made on them, and soon made himself their master, remaining amongst them, not only unmolested, but feared and respected, for some time. An opportunity offering later on of leaving for Europe on board a French vessel, he at once went on board, taking with him his favourite out of the maidens who had been offered him, Indian fashion, to wife. This was the Indian woman to whom Catherine de Medici stood sponsor when she was baptised on her arrival in France.

There was, however, another Indian woman who thought she had also a claim to accompany Alvares to Europe. This was the ill-fated Moêma, around whose name legend has thrown the glamour of romance. When she saw her erstwhile lord and master leaving her, she cast herself into the sea, and followed the vessel until, exhausted, she sank under the waves of the Atlantic.

The name, Moêma, is not in the Christian calendar, but it is nevertheless often given to little girls at the baptismal font, as it is one that has aroused much sympathetic interest. In fact, it is no exaggeration to say that Moêma is looked upon as a kind of national heroine.

The early history of Brazil naturally teems with stories and legends concerning these aborigines, but, as the English reader will be acquainted with the various types of North American Indians described by Kingsley in *Westward Ho!* and by

Fenimore Cooper in his thrilling romances, I need only say that the types of South American Indians are more or less similar. Not to become wearisome to my kindly readers, I will only touch lightly upon them, and I should like to remark that the hostility to the conquering race does not appear to have been so general or so persistent in the southern continent as in the northern.

During the colonial period, some of the tribes rendered valuable service to the Portuguese, and an amusing anecdote is told of a great chief and noted warrior, named Ararigboia, who assisted them in repelling a French attempt to take possession of Rio de Janeiro. This Indian afterwards went to the house of the Portuguese Governor, Salema, who offered him a chair and bade him be seated. Ararigboia at once sat down and crossed his legs, whereupon the Governor observed, through the interpreter, that this was not courteous in the presence of the representative of the king. "If you knew how tired my legs are with the wars in which I have served the king," replied the incensed warrior, "you would not grudge them this little rest; but since you find me so poor a courtier, I will return to my village where we do not regard such things, and will come no more to your court."

Some of the tribes, however, were fiercely hostile, and there is abundant proof that the more ferocious among them were cannibals. The first Bishop of Brazil, Dom Pedro Fernandes Sardinha, was wrecked on the ship on which he was returning to Portugal, and he and all on board, nearly a hundred in number, fell into the hands of the Caheté Indians, and

suffered the same fate as Captain Cook in the Sandwich Isles. Tradition says that nothing has grown since on the spot where this foul massacre took place.

Southey¹ tells a story of an old Indian woman who had been catechized and received into the Christian Church by one of the Jesuit missionaries. When she was dying she asked the Father, who had just administered Extreme Unction to her, if he could get her the hand of a boy, as she thought she could pick the bones, but she had no one to go out and shoot one for her.

In our own days a Brazilian friend of ours told us that his sister, who was recently married, had thought she would like to have a young Indian girl to train as a nurse for her baby, so she had one brought to her, and was pleased with the apparent docility of her manner. One day she went into her child's room, and found the young Indian nurse standing beside the cot gazing, as she thought, in rapt admiration at the child. She was very pleased, and made some remark by way of encouragement, to which the girl replied that the feet looked very nice. "The feet look very nice?" said the young mother, rather puzzled at this unusual remark, although she had no doubt about their being the nicest little feet any child could possess. "Yes," was the startling rejoinder, "the feet are the tastiest part."

Needless to say, the experiment in training an Indian girl as a nursemaid ended there and then. The feelings of the poor lady must have been some-

¹ *History of Brazil*. Robert Southey.

what akin to those of Pierre Loti when the Polynesian chief remarked to him, in course of conversation: "La chair de l'homme blanc est comme une banane mûre."¹

Most of the old chroniclers, however, seem to be agreed in saying that hostility, of the actively ferocious kind, was the exception rather than the rule. On the whole, they proved amenable under kindly treatment, and were quite ready to place themselves under the guidance of the Missionary Fathers, and learn of them. They revolted fiercely against any attempt to deprive them of their independence and subject them to bondage, which, I regret to have to say, was only too often the case. And here I should like to add that, however much the white man may have suffered at the hands of the Indian, I think that the latter has suffered much more at the hands of the white invader, although it is doubtful whether the cruelty and oppression in Brazil in those early days ever exceeded what has recently been taking place in another part of South America.

The principal tribes were the Tupís, the Tupinambás and the Guaranys. The Guarany type seems to suggest a Mongolic origin, both in appearance and manner, oblique eyes and prominent cheekbones being facial characteristics, and these are accompanied by an extremely reticent manner and a general air of melancholy.

¹ If I remember rightly, this is told in *Rarahu*. This remark is strangely at variance with the opinion of the Aztecs, who, far from thinking the flesh of their Spanish victims like a ripe banana, complained that it was disagreeably bitter. (See *The Conquest of Mexico*, by Prescott.)

This strain of melancholy is noticeable in a more or less degree, however, in all the Indian tribes. The Guaranys are still to be met with in Paraguay, which country is supposed by some ethnologists to have been their birthplace, and is said certainly to have been their favourite hunting-ground.

There are, of course, many other tribes, or subdivisions of tribes, some of whom are noted for their patience and industry and for cleanly habits; some for just the contrary.

The Mundurucús are a tall, muscular race, with a clear skin, which they tattoo all over. This tattooing of their bodies is a matter of extreme importance, and a family council is held to decide upon a design, the execution of which may sometimes take years to carry out. Their favourite ornament is the *pariuate-ran*,¹ which consists of a woven cotton belt adorned with the teeth extracted from the mouth of the enemy. The chief grants the right to wear this belt, not only to the valiant ones of the tribe who have earned it by their prowess, but also to the widows and sons of these heroes. The ceremony of granting this right is one of great importance, and takes place before the whole assembled tribe. The belt is not only decorative in effect, but carries with it the distinction of rendering its wearer immune from any obligation to work, and there is a kind of life pension attached to it.

These Mundurucús are proud and high-spirited and as punctilious in their respect for the given word as the most chivalrous of white men.

Amongst the Bororós one of the conditions re-

¹ *Pariuate* means enemy, and *ran* signifies belt.

quired to render a man eligible for marriage is that he should first have killed a jaguar.¹ If the race of jaguars should become extinct before this particular tribe of Indians, it may give rise to an interesting problem, although I have no doubt means will be found to deal adequately with the situation.

The Guatós have a peculiar power over wild animals, which they tame and domesticate without difficulty. The men of the tribe are of an exceedingly jealous temperament, and their women are only allowed to speak to strangers with their eyes fixed on their husband's face !

The Guaycurús are, perhaps, the highest in the social scale : they recognize class distinctions, and have nobles, plebeians and slaves in their midst. Their dwellings are arranged according to rank, and the men of noble families are only permitted to intermarry in their own sphere. They are great horsemen, and when a great noble amongst them dies, his horse is killed and laid at his side, his bow and arrows, his lance and other implements of war, likewise his ornaments, are all buried with him. It grieves me to have to put it on record that they are given to stealing women and children.

The Carayas are said to punish conjugal infidelity with burning. Otherwise they possess no idiosyncrasy worthy of note.

A great many of these tribes are nomadic and are consequently good hunters and fishermen.

The handsomest are generally conceded to be the Coroados (or crowned Indians), amongst whom good looks are common to both sexes.

¹ The South American tiger.

The Botucudos, who still exist in large numbers in the State of Matto Grosso, are noticeable for two traits: morally they are said to be exceedingly fierce, and physically they are distinguishable from every other by a wedge, made of wood, which they insert in the lower lip to extend it and make it protrude considerably beyond the upper. There are some types of these Indians to be seen at the Crystal Palace. At this latter place they are shown as engaged in the peaceful occupation of fishing, but in reality they are much more addicted to more warlike pursuits.

The Botucudos are still very hostile, and actively resent any approach to their habitations. They occasionally make raids on the nearest towns, harassing the inhabitants thereof very much.

The Negroes, I need scarcely say, are an imported race, and entered the country in the humble capacity of slaves. Some of their descendants, nevertheless, have risen to distinction and even historical renown, to wit: Marcilio Dias, the intrepid sailor whose name has been bestowed on one of the vessels of the Brazilian Navy. Nor must I forget to mention Henrique Dias, who, after having been wounded several times in various engagements with the Dutch,¹ finally lost his right hand, but exclaiming that he had still one hand left to fight for his God and his country, went on fighting, as if nothing had

¹ The Dutch made strenuous efforts to annex a portion of Brazil. Maurice de Nassau and Hoogstraaten even succeeded in gaining a fairly firm footing there, but were finally evicted. The Dutch revenged themselves, however, by seizing some of the Portuguese possessions in the East Indies.

happened. His valour was rewarded by the Portuguese Government, who conferred upon him the title of Governor and *Mestre de campo* (literally field-master), and at his death the crown ordered, in honour of his memory, that in the various captaincies¹ into which the country was then divided, a corps should be organized consisting of negroes: that is to say, all the men, and likewise all the officers, were to be negroes. These corps were called *Regimentos dos Henriques* (Regiments of the Henries), and they still continued after the independence of Brazil, which was proclaimed on the 7th September, 1822, when Brazil became an empire under Dom Pedro I.²

There were two of these regimentos in Pernambuco: the old Henriques and the new. Neither men nor officers received pay, the honour of serving was sufficient reward.

In 1731 the king of Portugal issued a decree declaring that colour should not constitute a bar to the holding of public office under the crown. And under the reign of Dom Pedro II (the last emperor of Brazil), several Brazilians of African origin received decorations and titles of nobility. Whatever antipathy, if any, may yet remain in the minds of private individuals towards people of colour, there is certainly none shown publicly. Their condition is very different from what it is in the United States of North America.

In this connexion an incident worthy of remark

¹ Brazil was originally divided into *capitanias* (or captaincies), all along the coast, each being under a governor appointed by the king of Portugal.

² See Chapter X, page 108.

occurred during the reign of the last emperor. A coloured man whom he had ennobled and raised to the rank of Viscount (the Visconde de Jequitinhonha) was sent to Washington in the capacity of Brazilian Minister for the United States, and at once proceeded thither. On his arrival he drove up to one of the hotels, but was refused ; he then went to another, but there the management likewise declined to receive him, and finally he returned to Brazil in deep disgust and indignation, having, no doubt, discovered the real reason of his failure to gain admission to any of the hotels in the North American official capital.

It was said that the Visconde was not free from the arrogance and presumption which not infrequently attend upon newly acquired rank, and possibly the emperor, a well-informed and widely-read man, who could not have been unaware of the attitude of North Americans towards people of colour, permitted him to be sent there in order to receive a timely check. He himself, however, certainly had no antipathy towards them, for he often distinguished them with his notice, and at one of the court balls which took place not long before the end of the imperial régime, the princess, Dona Isabel, danced with a coloured man who had taken his degree in medicine, and to whom the emperor had signified that the princess would do him that honour.

Amongst the men of colour who rose to distinction and rank in Brazil in the empire days, there stands out head and shoulders above his fellow-countrymen, irrespective of colour or origin, the Barão (Baron) de Cotegipe, a great leader of the Conservative

party in those days. This was a man highly respected for his sound judgment and for other eminent qualities which inspired confidence in so marked a degree that it is a noteworthy fact that, whenever he was at the head of the government, the rate of Exchange was nearly always higher than under the administration of any other political leader. It is a significant tribute to his high integrity of character that, although he held this office for some time, he died a poor man.

Whilst on the subject of the different types to be seen in Brazil, I must not omit to mention a very picturesque one that used to be very common when we first went out, and that was the Preta Mina, or Mina Negress. This name must not be taken to imply any connexion with the State of Minas Geraes, for it has nothing to do with it ; it is simply a name given to a particular race of Africans brought over to Brazil originally by the slave-dealers.

These women are big and, generally although not always, extraordinarily stout. They mostly congregate round about the market places, or at the corners of the principal thoroughfares with their *Taboleiro* in front of them. The *taboleiro*, I should explain, is a kind of wooden tray, something like a butler's tray, only not quite so large. They carry it on their head when walking about, and on it are displayed all kinds of goodies and sweetstuffs to tempt the passer-by. Sometimes they sit before a large iron vessel, like a soup-kettle on three legs—not unlike those used by the Irish peasants—under which they kindle a fire to cook a kind of stew.

Their attire consists of a spotlessly white chemise,

sometimes ornamented in a most elaborate manner with hand-made lace and drawn-thread work ; a striped cotton skirt—enormously full, it must take yards and yards to make one—put into a kind of yoke ; a turban round the head, and sometimes a light shawl hanging from one shoulder. Round their necks they wear numberless bead necklaces, and strings of coloured beads adorn their arms, which are otherwise bare. A pair of dainty little Turkish slippers completes this simple yet picturesque costume, and the young ones rouge the heels of their stockingless feet. The old ones nearly always smoke a pipe.

Some of these women sit busily making pillow lace, or, as it is called there, “ Bilros ” lace, at which they are adepts.

I fear, however, that this quaint style of dress—like the picturesque costumes of the peasants of the various countries of Europe—is, alas, dying out. Now the young negresses mostly strive to follow the latest Paris fashion, regardless as to whether it suits them or not.

It is chiefly from the negro and half-caste classes that domestic servants are drawn ; the white Brazilian and the pure Indian would consider it quite *infra dig.* to go into service, although this does not necessarily imply unwillingness on their part to do any work that will come to them. For example : they make sweets, pastries and all manner of confectionery, they undertake all kinds of needlework ; and, in short, are quite proficient in the ordinary domestic arts, but they make a point of practising them at home.

Those who prefer white servants have to get them from the German colonies.

I have said nothing about the white, or conquering race, as this was the Portuguese race, and the history of this people with the exploits which rendered them famous during the fifteenth, sixteenth and seventeenth centuries are within the ken of every well-read Englishman who feels any interest in the doings of Europeans of those days.

CHAPTER VII

Rio de Janeiro—Its magnificent harbour—Great extent thereof—Islands in the bay—They are made use of—One is fortified—Paquetá most picturesque—Lighthouse on the Island of Rasa—Sugar-loaf mountain—Corcovado (Hunchback) Mountain—Railway to ascend—Splendid panorama to be seen from the summit—The Central Avenue—The city greatly improved—Much more healthy now—Imprudence of new-comers—Large and excellent hospitals—The “ Beneficencia Portuguesa ”—The Cathedral of the Candelaria—Story of its foundation—New Municipal theatre—Cost £1,000,000—Madame Réjane exclaims at the lavishness of its decorations and fittings—Other theatres—Munroe Palace—The exhibition of 1908—Commemoration of the centenary of opening of ports of Brazil to international commerce—Tram-car service said to be the best in the world—Restaurants—Milk brought from Minas Geraes—Cost of living very high—The tax called “ Decima Urbana ”—Suburbs much higher above the sea-level than the city—Botafogo—Larangeiras—Tijuca—Gavea—Copa Cabana—Nichteroy—National Museum formerly one of the Imperial Palaces—Enormous meteorite, Bendegó, to be seen there—How it was brought to Rio—Amusing encounter with a stranger—His disparaging remarks anent the size of England—My last visit to Rio de Janeiro—The city quite transformed in appearance—Great improvements in the harbour—National School of Art—National Library—Portuguese Reading-room—Academy of Medicine and the Polytechnic School.

RIO DE JANEIRO, the capital of the empire, or, as it now is, the republic, is better known to Europeans, generally speaking, than the rest of the country, and this chiefly on account of its magnificent harbour and its beautiful Botanical Gardens.



BAY OF RIO, JANEIRO, SHOWING SUGAR LOAF MOUNTAIN.

The bay, which shares with Constantinople and Sydney the distinction of being the most beautiful in the world, excels these two, I think, in size. It is more or less oval in form, and is seventeen miles in length and fifteen at its greatest breadth, whilst the coast has an extension of forty-five miles, approximately. The entrance has a breadth of about 1,500 metres with a depth of fifty-five metres which decreases and, in some of the sheltered creeks, is no more than six or eight metres. Sr. Affonso Celso has very aptly said of it that it is at once a bay, a collection of bays, an archipelago and a small Mediterranean sea.¹

The most notable feature on entering is the Pão d'Assucar, or Sugar-loaf Mountain, so called on account of its conical shape. It stands there like a sentinel mounting guard over the city, whilst the wide sweep of water with fair-sized islands dotted about, and the thickly-wooded mountains in the background, form an exceedingly noble spectacle.

Some of the islands in the bay are large enough to contain buildings, such as powder magazines, workshops, etc. The largest is that called "Governador," which is about twenty miles in circumference. On another, the "Ilha Fiscal," is a dependency of the Customs House, and on another, the Ilha do Vianna, is a very perfectly fitted up establishment for all kinds of naval repairs ; indeed, this ship-yard is the finest in all South America, and would bear comparison with many in Europe. The owner of the island, a very wealthy man, lives there himself,

¹ " Porque me ufano do meu Paiz." Affonso Celso.

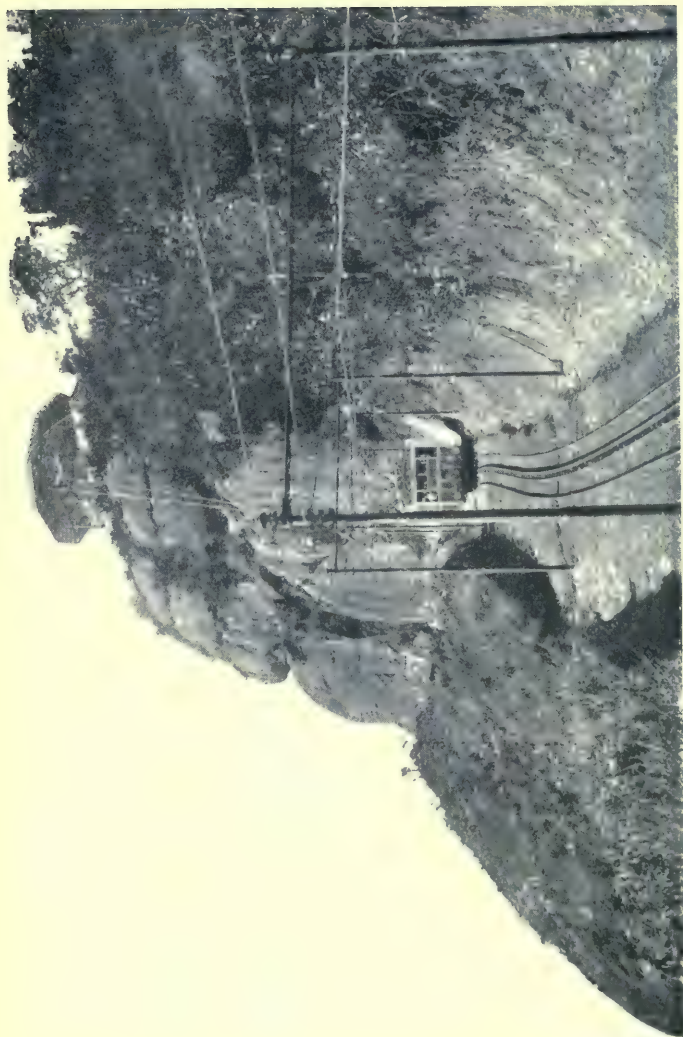
and has dwellings there for his workmen, as well as schools for young boys who are homeless, and who are brought up to some trade or another under his care.

Yet another notable island is the fortified one of Villegaignon, which owes its name to a Frenchman, Nicolas Durand de Villegaignon, who came to Rio de Janeiro in the year 1555 with Admiral de Coligny, and, with about a hundred men, took possession of the island and commenced fortifying it. This settlement was recaptured by the Portuguese in the year 1560, and all subsequent attempts on the part of the French to regain possession of it proved unsuccessful.

Visitors to Kew Gardens will doubtless be familiar with Miss North's beautiful collection of pictures, amongst which are some very typical ones of Brazil, one especially good one being that of the island of Paquetá. This picturesque little island is a favourite resort for picnics, and is notable, even amongst the luxuriant vegetation of Rio de Janeiro, for its "Mangueiras," or mango-trees, which are so large that whole families can encamp for the day under their hospitable branches, and enjoy the pleasant shade they afford.

Outside the bay, six miles from the entrance, is the island of Rasa, on which stands a lighthouse with a light at an elevation of 318 feet, both catoptric and revolving, with five seconds intervals, of white and green lights. This is visible at a distance of seventeen miles (28 kilometres).

The thing to do in Rio de Janeiro is, of course, to go up the Corcovado, or Hunchback Mountain. This



RAILWAY TRACK UP THE CORCOVADO (THE HUNCHBACK).

mountain, which can also be seen from the harbour, stands a little way out of the town, and is ascended by a railway worked with a cog-wheel in a rack. It is one of the sights of the world, this mountain, from which a kind of upper story rises almost perpendicularly on one side, cleft across by an immense chasm on the other. Across this chasm there stretches a railway bridge, and it is a thrilling experience to find one's self seated in a railway carriage, looking over the side into an apparently bottomless pit, the sides of which are covered with the most luxuriant and varied vegetation. From the top of the mountain the visitor has a view perhaps unparalleled in the world. On the opposite side are the Organ Mountains, rising very erect, like the pipes of an organ, with one especially uplifted, as if in stern warning, and rather suitably named "O Dêdo de Deus" (The Finger of God), for it does somewhat resemble a finger of majestic proportions. The city of Rio de Janeiro lies at one's feet; Nictheroy, the capital of the State, can be seen in the distance, on the further side of the bay; and, far away, at the base of the mountain, is the glorious Atlantic with its waves sparkling and shimmering in the almost perpetual sunshine.

A charming break in the journey up the Corcovado is to get out at the station halfway up, called Palmeiras, where there is a very good restaurant. Here too there is a magnificently-wooded road, or lane, called Sylvestre, which is a favourite walk with foreigners. Brazilians are not fond of this form of exercise, especially in Rio and the other tropical cities.

The Botanic Gardens lie on the inner side of this mountain, and indeed may be said to spring from it, for much of the primeval forest which clad its sides was utilized in planning and laying out these superb gardens, which have, I believe, only one rival in the world, the Botanic Gardens at Singapore.

The streets of Rio de Janeiro, until a few years ago, were narrow and indifferently built, but of late years great improvements have been effected, and it now possesses a very fine avenue, the Avenida Central, going right across the city, which is wider than the Champs Elysées in Paris, and will allow of four separate streams of vehicular traffic without overcrowding. Trees have been planted all along this avenue, and when they are fully grown the effect should be very handsome.

This is an improvement which was much needed in Rio de Janeiro, for until recently it had no fine streets at all, if we except the Rua 1° de Março. The Rua do Ouvidor, the fashionable street, was so narrow that no vehicular traffic was allowed in it (except, I believe, the dust-carts in the early morning). People used to leave their carriages in the Largo de São Francisco, or the Largo da Carioca, and do their shopping on foot. In one way it was very pleasant, this street with its fine shops, and no carriages, carts, or vans or any kind to interfere with one in crossing from one side to the other.

The opening out of the fine avenue I have just referred to right through the heart of the city has not only rendered it much more beautiful, but much healthier. The sanitary conditions of the city have

also received much needed care and attention during recent years, with the result that Rio de Janeiro is now as healthy as any other large city. Cases of Yellow Fever have become so rare that one is almost led to forget what a formidable scourge this used to be not so very long ago. In the *South American Journal* for 24th April, 1909, which is the last exact information I have on this subject, it is stated that "There have been no deaths from Yellow Fever at Rio de Janeiro for nearly a year."

In connexion with this subject I should like to remark that one very frequent cause of fever and other kindred troubles, amongst new arrivals at any rate, is that they—the new arrivals, I mean—are apt to indulge too freely in the fruit which abounds there. Of course, it is a very great and not unnatural temptation to any one arriving fresh in the place: the heat is very great, luscious fruits of every kind offer delicious coolness to the parched tongue, and so the mischief is done. Another very common source of danger lies hidden in the tempting-looking ice-creams there. Newcomers cannot be too careful, and would do well to wait until they have become acclimatized to some degree before they partake of either fruit or ice-creams, or indeed of ice in any shape or form.

Going out insufficiently protected against the rays of the sun is another mistake commonly made by Europeans. I remember one young man who came out from England: he spent his first Sunday chasing butterflies out in the woods, and within a few days from then he was under the ground. No doubt his friends in England attributed his death

to the climate of Brazil, but it was due almost entirely to his own imprudence. Cases of a similar nature are not uncommon there.

Rio de Janeiro possesses several good hospitals, amongst which the principal ones are : the Santa Casa de Misericordia, the Strangers' Hospital, which is English, and the Beneficencia Portuguesa, a large and important institution, well endowed and admirably managed. Besides the usual wards, both public and private, it possesses a well-stocked library, which must be a great boon to all book-lovers in a country where books are scarce and expensive.

Whilst on the subject, I should like to place it on record that it is to the great credit of the Portuguese, many of whom come out to Brazil quite poor, and by their own perseverance, industry and thrift succeed in accumulating fortunes—sometimes very considerable fortunes—that all of them, whether possessed of large means or small, contribute to the establishment and maintenance of these charitable institutions, which are to be found in every town wherein they dwell in any number.

Foremost amongst the buildings of note in Rio should be mentioned the Cathedral of the Candelaria, renaissance in style, built to commemorate the fact of a Portuguese family having been saved from a wreck at sea. There are six frescoes in the Sanctuary relating the story : how the family left Lisbon for Brazil ; how a storm arose and wrecked their ship ; how they vowed that if their lives were spared they would build a church on the spot of land where they might be cast ashore ; their landing on the then

very thinly-populated shore of Rio de Janeiro, and how they immediately set about laying the foundations of a church in fulfilment of their vow, which church, in the course of exactly one hundred years, grew into a handsome cathedral.

In contrast with the cathedral built by the pious efforts of three generations of worshippers is the new Municipal Theatre, which was in course of building when I left Brazil, and has since been completed. This is said to have cost the enormous sum of £1,000,000 sterling, and is so luxuriously fitted throughout that Madame Réjane, the noted French actress who went out to the inauguration of it, is said to have exclaimed: "Oh, mais c'est trop!" and when a lady of the experience of Madame Réjane was oppressed by the lavishness of the decorations, what more need be said?

The Lyrico is the Opera-house of Rio, and many of the European operatic stars may be seen and heard there; some of them are quite frequent visitors to Brazil, as are several of the stars of the French stage.

An evening at the theatre in Brazil is much more of a social function than it is here: in the intervals, which are much longer between the acts, the occupants of the boxes and stalls call on each other, or sometimes walk about the corridors chatting now with one friend, now with another. There are generally two tiers of boxes and a gallery above them. There is nothing which corresponds to what is called the "Pit" here. Some of the smaller theatres in Rio possess gardens where refreshment is served between the acts.

Amongst the many costly marble buildings which adorn the city of Rio de Janeiro the Munroe Palace is especially deserving of mention. This building was originally constructed by the Government of Brazil for the housing of various native products sent to the International Exposition at St. Louis, U.S.A., in 1904, after the closing of which it was taken down, the material carried to Rio, where it was rebuilt. It bears the name of Munroe Palace in honour of the President of the United States of North America who formulated the doctrine, known by his name, of "America for the Americans." It is a fine building of marble and granite. The first event of importance to take place within its walls, after its removal to Rio and reconstruction there, was the meeting of the Pan-American Congress, held there in September, 1906.

In 1908 an exhibition was held in Rio to commemorate the centenary of the opening of the ports of Brazil to international commerce. This lasted from August to November, and at night time the various buildings were brilliantly illuminated, and the effect of thousands upon thousands of electric lights outlining the buildings was indescribably beautiful as seen from the bay. The fairy-like beauty of this picture was still further enhanced by the fine natural setting of the mountains in the background.

Rio de Janeiro is credited with possessing the best service of tram-cars in the world, and I should be inclined to doubt whether any city could be better or more efficiently supplied with them.

The restaurants are fairly numerous: some are



ENTRANCE TO THE RUE PAYSANDU, RIO.

very good, all are expensive, but there are several where it is possible to go in and have just a cup of black coffee, which is most agreeable on a hot day. Here I may mention that the habit, almost universal in England, of taking milk or cream with coffee is quite unknown here—except, sometimes, in the early morning—and would be laughed at as merely spoiling a good cup of coffee.

Cream, of course, is never seen here, neither would anything so rich be very pleasant or appetizing in so hot a climate. The milk is brought from the country, chiefly from Minas Geraes, in hermetically corked bottles ; and any one going into a restaurant to take a glass of milk has to pay for the whole bottle, which is opened fresh for every customer, as it will not keep sweet when once the bottle is opened, although it is always kept in ice-chests.

I think I am right in saying that it is the general custom in private houses to boil the milk as soon as it is brought by the milkman in the early morning. The meat too has to be at least slightly cooked in the morning, in order to keep it through the day. And the domestic fowls for the table are always bought, or taken from one's own back yard, alive, and killed and prepared at once for the table.

Living is very dear here, by comparison with England, and it has become increasingly so of late years on account of the high import duties levied, as I think, mistakenly, for the purpose of protecting national industry, which, as a matter of fact, is still in quite an initial stage.

Foreign articles being subject to such high duties, national products are sold at proportion-

ately high prices. It is consequently almost superfluous for me to point out the vast field for industrial enterprise which lies waiting to be opened out here.

Amongst other taxes may be instanced that on house property, called the "Decima Urbana," or City Tenth, but which was recently raised to fifteen per cent. in Rio, a measure which created no little indignation, the tax being a percentage on the rent of the houses. This same tax was offered by the State of Bahia as security for a loan which they were negotiating for here in 1908-1909.

The suburbs of Rio de Janeiro are all at a considerable height above the level of the sea, and are consequently much cooler than the city itself. Botafogo, Laranjeiras and, further out, Tijuca, are all exceedingly beautiful, especially the last-named, which far surpasses the others in beauty of scenery. There is a special service of tram-cars in connexion with Tijuca, which, after leaving the city, do not stop until they reach their destination—a "non-stop" run of about two hours, if I remember rightly.

Further out still lie the Gavea and Copa Cabana: the former owes its name of Gavea (Round-top) to its truncated appearance, which does remind one of the piece at the masthead so designated. The latter is a very favourite bathing-place, as its smooth, sandy shore is both pleasant and safe.

On the east side of the bay lies Nictheroy, the capital of the State of Rio de Janeiro, whilst, curiously enough, the city of Rio de Janeiro, the capital of the country, lies in the Federal District. Nic-

theroy is connected with Rio by an excellent service of steam ferry-boats.

The imperial family had various residences round about Rio, the favourite being Petropolis, at a little distance from the capital, so called after the late emperor, Dom Pedro. Another was the Quinta Imperial in São Christovão. This place, which stands in exquisitely beautiful grounds, has now been converted into a National Museum, and, amongst the natural curiosities to be seen there, is the famous meteorite Bendegó, which fell in Bahia in 1784.

This meteorite takes its name from the place where it fell in the State of Bahia, or Province of Bahia, as it was then. It lay there for nearly a hundred years, as all attempts to remove it proved unsuccessful, until, in the month of June, 1888, it was finally brought to Rio de Janeiro by a lieutenant in the Navy, who undertook the difficult task. Some idea of the difficulty of the enterprise may be gleaned when it is known that this enormous meteorite measures over two metres at its greatest length, and nearly one and a half at its greatest width. It weighs more than five and a half tons, and had to be brought a distance of more than seventy miles across difficult country still in a very primitive condition and full of streams and forest-lands that had to be negotiated, and, to add to that, when it was got on board it was found that its magnetic power disturbed the mariner's compass, so that the difficulties and dangers of the expedition were many and varied. However, it now reposes safely in the Museum in Rio de Janeiro, and the naval officer

who accomplished the venturesome feat of piloting it there was rewarded with well-merited promotion, besides having received financial aid from a private source and the co-operation of the Government.

This meteorite is of a very composite character, and, I believe, has no rival for size, as far as is known.

It was during my first visit to Rio, in 1883, that a very amusing remark was made to me by a Brazilian. I was staying at the *Grand Hotel* in Santa Theresa, and one morning, as I was sitting out on the verandah, a man, who had arrived on the previous day from Santa Catharina, said to me, by way of entering into conversation: "Sua terra não vale nada," which literally translated is: Your country is worth nothing. Somewhat surprised, I naturally inquired why he rated the value of my country so low, and he replied: "Porque é muito pequena" (Because it is so small). I suppose he had been looking at a map of the world that morning, perhaps for the first time, and had noticed that, by comparison with Brazil, the British Isles do look rather small. Certainly from the point of view of mere size he must have thought us a very insignificant nation, but it was a curious way of engaging in a little friendly chat with a stranger.

When I last saw Rio, in 1909, much of the work in connexion with the improvements both in the harbour and the city had been accomplished, with the result that the latter was in a great measure transformed, and not only much embellished, but much healthier.

Since 1853 various schemes had been brought



AVENIDA CENTRAL, RIO.
From "Brazil in 1912."



RUBBER TRANSPORT, RIVER NINGÚ, PARÁ.
From "Brazil in 1912."

forward for improvements in the harbour of Rio de Janeiro, and some had already been carried out. In 1903 a vast and comprehensive project was elaborated and finally accepted by the Government, and on the 20th May of the same year a loan was contracted for to put it into execution. The work was started in May of the following year.

People who were in Rio at the time when the old houses were demolished, to open out a way for the grand new avenues, say it looked as if the city had been partially destroyed by an earthquake, but when I last beheld it a new and beautiful city was emerging from the ruins of the old one.

For the payment of the interest on the loan raised for the purpose of carrying out these improvements and embellishments, a tax of $1\frac{1}{2}$ per cent., afterwards increased to 2 per cent., payable in gold, was levied on all goods despatched in the Custom House of Rio de Janeiro.

The National School of Art and the National Public Library are now installed in new premises in the Avenida.

The former was founded in the year 1816, under the denomination of the Royal Academy of Drawing, Painting, Sculpture and Civil Architecture. The building was merely a wing of the Treasury, but the School now possesses a sumptuous new edifice of its own in the central avenue.

There are two public libraries in Rio de Janeiro, the National and the Municipal.

The National Library had its origin in Portugal, and the valuable works of the Court Library were transported there when the Regent fled, with the

royal family and as many of the royal treasures as could be hastily gathered together, from the approach of Napoleon. This library was first installed in the hospital of the Order of the Carmelites (Ordem do Carmo), and then consisted of 14,000 volumes. In the year 1858 the library contained 240,000 volumes, and it was then removed to a building especially prepared for it. It is now, as already stated, installed in a handsome new building of its own in the Avenida Central.

Besides the fine collection of books, this library possesses a valuable collection of medals, numbering over 25,000, many of which are very rare. It has also 100,000 engravings.

The library is only for reference purposes, and is open to the public, free of charge, every day from 10 a.m. to 9 p.m., Sundays and holidays excepted.

The Gabinete Portuguez de Leitura (Portuguese Reading Room) is considered to be the most beautiful building in Rio de Janeiro. The library contains 70,000 volumes, and the "Collecção Camoënana" or Camões Collection is believed to be the most perfect extant.

In accordance with the terms of the Constitution of the Republic, the higher education is provided for by the Union, but each State provides for the primary education, or Ensino Primario.

In Rio de Janeiro there is a "Faculdade" (academy or school) of Medicine, which confers the degree of Doctor of Medicine.¹ The course occupies six years.

¹ In Bahia there is also a College of Medicine, and Pernambuco

The Polytechnic School confers various certificates in the respective Arts of Engineering and Surveying.

and São Paulo each has its School of Law, whilst Porto Alegre, the capital of Rio Grande do Sul, possesses an Academy of Medicine and a School of Engineering.

CHAPTER VIII

The Mantiqueira Mountains—Home of brigands in former days—Winding course of the railway to reach higher level—Roads—Generally only mule paths—Fine road from Petropolis to Juiz de F6ra—A handsome house built to be offered to the Emperor—He declined to accept it—Barbacena—High elevation—Summer resort for visitors from Rio de Janeiro—The gold mines—They were formerly worked by slaves—A member of the Society for the Abolition of Slavery held shares in this company—Noted diamonds found in Minas Geraes—Immense quantity of iron ore—Agricultural and pastoral resources of this State—It is celebrated for its cheese—Mineral springs—High temperature of some—They are much frequented—The great Brazilian spider—Special observations and experiments made with it—Huge black ant.

L EAVING Rio de Janeiro by train, and travelling inland by the Great Central Railway, we come upon the Serra da Mantiqueira, or Mantiqueira Range, in the State of Minas Geraes.

This beautiful range of mountains once formed the favourite hiding-place of bands of robbers, who used to lie in wait to attack travellers coming laden with gold, silver and precious stones from the mines. This, of course, was in the early days, long before the railway was built.

The views to be had from the carriage windows all along this line are of exceptional beauty ; at one part the railway forms three almost parallel lines, at different elevations, in its winding progress to

reach the higher level. Looking out of the carriage window it looks like the letter S cut in steel in the green carpet of the mountain.

The roads and highways are generally very narrow—mere mule paths, in fact—and ladies used formerly to travel in a kind of sedan-chair fixed on very long poles with a mule at either end.

There is one excellent road, called the "Estrada União Industria," which leads from Petropolis, outside the city of Rio de Janeiro (in the State of the same name) to Juiz de Fóra, in Minas Geraes. This road was built by a wealthy Brazilian of the name of Marianno Procopio, who lives in a beautiful place, just outside Juiz de Fóra, bearing his own name, viz., Marianno Procopio.

Juiz de Fóra is a town almost surrounded by high hills, one of which is, or at any rate was, in those days, called "Morro do Imperador" (The Emperor's Hill), because the late emperor, Dom Pedro II, climbed it when he was staying there.

It was in Juiz de Fóra that we noticed a very handsome private house that was always shut up, and, on asking the reason of this, we were told that the owner had had it built to offer to the emperor, and had, in fact, sent him a gold key asking His Majesty's acceptance of the house to which it belonged. The emperor returned it, saying he could not accept a present from a subject, and, up to the time of our being there, the house had remained entirely closed.

Barbacena was one of the favourite summer resorts for Fluminense society. Fluminense, I should explain, is the term used to designate the inhabitants

of Rio de Janeiro. Carioca means the same thing, but is more used in the sense of our word Cockney.

Barbacena is at an elevation of about 1,143 metres above the level of the sea, and it was there that I spent the coolest summer I have ever experienced in Brazil. It usually rains a little every day during the summer months, which, of course, has a very cooling effect on the atmosphere. Strange to say, I was told that, in the winter months, very little rain falls, sometimes none at all for some months, but strong winds are frequent, blowing from any and every point of the compass directly upon the town, which is mercilessly exposed to them on every side.

The State of Minas Geraes, as its name implies—for, translated, it means General Mines—is a land of considerable mineral wealth of a varied kind. Many of the cities in this State have characteristic names, such as “Ouro Preto” (Black Gold), “Ouro Branco” (White Gold), “Ouro Fino” (Fine Gold), and Diamantina, where the diamonds principally come from.

The chief gold mine in this State at present is Morro Velho, a mine of long standing. São João del Rey and Cata Branca¹ were the two principal ones formerly, but were abandoned long ago. The former, however, has now been taken up again.

Whilst on the subject of mines, I cannot refrain from relating the following rather amusing fact

¹ In the collection of pictures at Kew Gardens already referred to (*vide* page 68) there is a view of this mine, and also one of the Morro Velho mine.

which came to my knowledge in connexion with the Cata Branca Mines : these mines were worked by slaves, of which there were about three hundred, and amongst its shareholders it numbered one who was a prominent member of the Society for the Abolition of Slavery, which used to hold its meetings at Exeter Hall ! Possibly this gentleman did not know how the mine was worked. I merely tell the tale as 'twas told to me.

Two noted diamonds have been found in Minas Geraes : the famous Bragança Diamond, which was discovered during the Portuguese dominion, and consequently became the property of the Portuguese crown,¹ and the exquisitely beautiful "Estrella do Sul" (Star of the South), which was picked up, quite casually, so it is said, by a negro (or negress, some say), at a place called "Nossa Senhora dos Homens da Bagagem," very sensibly shortened to Bagagem.

The Bragança, which was until quite recently in the Portuguese Regalia, enjoyed for many years the distinction of being the largest diamond known—in fact, it was so much larger than any other previously found that grave doubts were entertained at the time of its discovery as to whether it could possibly be a diamond at all on account of its great size. The discovery of still larger ones since, namely, the one given by the late President Kruger to the late Pope Leo XIII, and the Cullinan Diamond, now the property of our own Royal Family, should

¹ I have no knowledge as to what was done with it at the overthrow of the Monarchy recently in Portugal.

have served to remove all suspicions or misgivings of this nature.

The Star of the South was found in 1853 : it lay for some time in a bank in Rio de Janeiro, was afterwards bought by a French Syndicate and exhibited here in Europe. It was eventually purchased by an Indian Prince (I think, the Gaekwar of Baroda), for the sum of £80,000. It is said to be perfectly white, but assuming a delicate rose tint by refraction.

Iron is also abundant in this State, and rich and extensive beds of iron ore—in some places visible on the surface—have been known to exist here for ages, but have not yet been worked. In the time of the Portuguese dominion a little of this iron, just from the surface, was taken, worked, and a lock was made from it and sent to Portugal to be exhibited there, whereupon the Portuguese Government immediately prohibited the mining of iron. It is difficult to understand the reason, or, rather, motive, for obviously there could be no reason in such shortsighted policy.

It is not in mineral wealth alone that this State is so highly favoured : it likewise possesses great agricultural and pastoral resources. Coffee is cultivated there to a considerable extent, and sugar, tobacco and cotton also grow well there. The rearing of cattle is an important source of wealth, and gives employment to a good proportion of the population, for it is chiefly from here that Rio de Janeiro gets its supply of both beef and milk, which are sent daily by train, and of cheese, the latter being considered as some of the best in the country.

The mineral springs which are to be found in various parts of Brazil are especially abundant in this State. Some are ferruginous, some gaseous, some alkaline, whilst others are acidified, and again others are sulphurous. Some are used for drinking purposes and some for bathing purposes, and some for both.

The temperature of these waters varies according to the spring, from 72° to 106° Fahrenheit, and there is one at a place called "poços de Caldas" (Caldas Wells, from the Latin *calidus*, hot), which gives water at the temperature of 113° Fahrenheit. This is one of the best known and most frequented of them all—in fact, it has been known since the end of the eighteenth century.

The Caxambú Springs in Minas Geraes are celebrated for their health-giving properties, and are evidently increasing in favour, as not only are they much frequented, but the waters are bottled in great quantities for sending away.

The Springs of Lambary and Cambuquira are likewise famed for their mineral waters. Both places are well equipped with suitable accommodation for visitors who wish to undergo the cure.

I have never visited any of these thermal health resorts myself, but have known many people who have, and can therefore vouch for the difference in their appearance and general tone before and after going there.

It was during my stay in Minas Geraes that I made the acquaintance of the Caranguejeira, a huge spider (aranha), so called from its somewhat crab-like appearance, carangueijo being the Portu-

guese for crab. This little monster is so curious that it deserves description. For a spider it is enormous,¹ some of the largest measuring, with legs extended, nearly eight inches across. Its body is covered all over with dark, coarse hair, which stands out in quite a bristling manner. Its spinning apparatus consists of two pairs of digit-like organs. Its mouth, which is formidable indeed, is furnished with two mandibles, each composed of two parts, one quite bulky and velvety, nearly an inch in length, occupying the base of the mouth, and served on the corresponding lower side by a furrow supplied with strong, stiff hairs externally, and internally with teeth. The other part, or joint, which articulates with the first, is smooth and bright, and narrows little by little until it terminates in a fine point. This part is hook-like in form, slightly convex, and is inclined downwards: it adapts itself perfectly to the furrow, similarly to the blade of a penknife to its handle. There exists a complete similarity between this hook and the teeth which carry the venom of poisonous snakes, and like these it is hollow and has, on the convex side near the point, a small orifice through which the poison is injected into the wound when the spider bites.

The maxilla of the caranguejeira, like those of spiders in general, are furnished with a kind of feelers which might almost be considered as a fifth pair of legs: in the male they terminate in a smooth, hard point. The legs are long and very hairy.

¹ Some are much larger than the specimen acquired in the beginning of this year (1913) by the Zoological Gardens Society.

It has been said of this mammoth spider that, when molested, it will spring and attack its aggressor, but, although this statement is quite common, I believe it to be incorrect, as its legs do not appear suitable for leaping: there is no noticeable thickening at the thigh, such as may be observed generally amongst insects that advance in this way, like the locust, the cricket, etc.

Like most of its species, it prefers dark and hidden places for its abode, such as the trunk of a fallen tree, or nooks and crannies made by large stones heaped together, or holes made in the ground, but in every case its nest or home is lined with a dense white web. It is rarely seen in full daylight, it generally shows itself late in the day, or on very dull days when the sky is overcast and a storm threatening; then, by walking quite a short distance into the woods four, five, six, or even more, may be encountered, out evidently on the hunt.

I am induced to give a somewhat lengthy account of this arachnid, because I well remember many years ago reading in an English periodical (the name of which I have now forgotten) a request for a good account of the large Brazilian spider, long before I had had any opportunity of observing it myself.

I recollect on one occasion seizing hold of one with a pair of tongs, when I was surprised at the amount of strength he manifested in trying to get away, and also at the way he bit at the tongs, making a distinctly audible grating sound.

I will now subjoin an account given by the Rev. Fr. A. Schupp, S.J.,¹ from observations made with

¹ *Annuario do Rio Grande do Sul*, 1907.

quite a fine specimen he had succeeded in capturing and keeping secure in a large glass vessel. During some days it was left without food, after which a mouse was introduced, alive. It remained quite still, apparently not daring to move, although its eyes turned in different directions, evidently seeking some way of escape. The spider regarded his visitor attentively, then advanced little by little, and finally made a sudden rush, seizing the mouse instantly by the muzzle, inserting his teeth completely and shaking his prey vigorously from side to side, like a dog would do with a rat preparatory to killing it. The spider, far from loosening his hold, seemed to be biting harder, the mouse struggling a little at first, but its struggles soon ceased, and after about half a minute it did not move again. After a little while the spider, changing his position, began to weave some coarse threads round the head of his victim, then he rested for some moments, making a slight movement with his mouth only, possibly by way of cleansing it a little, and then commenced his work of mastication, always with the same motion of the mandibles, alternately lowering and raising them.

It was seven o'clock in the morning when the spider seized his prey, and by midday next day it was entirely eaten. About a fortnight afterwards a frog was introduced, and the spider immediately seized it by its hind legs. The frog, which seemed half sleepy, emitted a peculiar sound, but did not move; the spider, for his part, held on tightly, merely observing his prey, but not making any attempt to stir for the present. The frog, very

naturally finding the conditions rather unpleasant, began to try to free itself from its adversary, whereupon the spider took hold of it between his feelers, securing it firmly thus, and then, bringing his mandibles very cautiously nearer and nearer the head of his victim, he finally seized the frog by the muzzle. The latter again gave forth the same peculiar sound already mentioned, and made a fresh effort to escape. After ten minutes more or less it ceased to give any sign of life, and immediately after that the spider set to work upon it, and by the next day all that was left of the poor frog was a little ball in which were rolled up some fragments of bone, nothing more.

On the succeeding days the caranguejeira ate a wasp, some spleenwort, and finally another specimen of his own kind, but smaller in size. It was rather surprising at first to witness the evident fear and astonishment with which the new-comer regarded its rival, apparently seeking a way to escape from it.

Very interesting, too, was the way in which our caranguejeira proceeded with another spider of a different species, but of unusual size. Immediately he caught sight of it he rushed at it in great fury, and seized it suspended between his feelers and shook it violently, just as he had done with the mouse.

It was curious to notice that directly he began eating, he also commenced spinning some broad, coarse skeins of thread, covering the ground with them, apparently at random, perhaps because he had a superabundance of material that he wished to get rid of.

Of various flies he ate all, excepting the legs, although he entirely consumed a corpulent lizard and a well-developed locust, leaving nothing whatsoever.

One of the chief objects of the experiments above described was to study the degree of venomousness of this animal. And there can be no doubt that the poison must be of considerable energy, seeing that batrachia even of the size indicated succumbed to the bite in so short a space of time, notwithstanding their cold blood and slow circulation.

There remains yet the question as to whether the bite is fatal to man. The general opinion is that the bite of the caranguejeira is no less venomous and fatal to man than that of the most deadly snake, and in seeking information on this subject cases have been heard of wherein it appeared to be so, but on inquiring more closely and carefully into these cases the result has not been convincing. The two following cases are well authenticated: a man was peering into a cavity in the ground one day, and seeing something moving about, introduced his hand, thinking it might be a bird, but he soon found out his mistake, for he was immediately bitten by a caranguejeira. Soon after he fainted, but the effect passed off without any worse consequences. The other case was of a colonist who was bitten, and was so ill from the effects of the bite that he had to keep to his bed for some weeks.

The action of the poison seems to cause rapid decomposition of the part bitten.

One word as to the enemies of the caranguejeira. Colonists worthy of credence assert that wild cats

eat them, although a domestic cat which was seen to catch and eat one fared so badly after it as nearly to lose the last of its proverbial nine lives. This spider's worst enemy, however, seems to be an enormous kind of wasp.

There is also in Brazil a gigantic kind of black ant about an inch and a half to two inches in length, called the Tanajura. Lady Burton in her book describes these ants, and mentions that they are dressed up like tiny dolls and sold as curiosities—not living, of course.

¹ *The Life of Sir Richard Burton*, by Lady Burton.

CHAPTER IX

The greatest coffee-producing country in the world—A coffee plantation, or, "Cafezal"—Pleasant perfume of the blossom—The trees are very delicate and require much care—They are susceptible to sudden changes of temperature—Affected by cold or wind—Transplanting necessary—A very high temperature is likewise detrimental—Much damage done sometimes by certain parasites—Picking the berries—Treatment—Preparing for the market—Two methods of doing this—Over-production causes a great fall in price—Serious crisis for the planters—Many schemes to improve their condition—Result of final decision—The Convention of Taubaté—Loan of £15,000,000 raised here in England to carry out this project and establish the "Caixa de Conversão"—Comissão de Expansão do Brazil to make a propaganda of Brazilian products—Fazenda coffee—Association subsidized by the State of São Paulo—Santos the great port for shipping coffee—Odour pervades the town and permeates everything—It is not pleasant, although the aroma of the prepared beverage is—Railway from Santos to São Paulo—Ascent of the mountain—Picturesque scenery.

AS Brazil supplies more than three-fourths of the coffee produced in the whole world, or, at any rate, of that accounted for, a few words as to its culture and preparation for the market may not come amiss.

According to history, coffee was first introduced into Brazil in the early part of the eighteenth century and cultivated in Pará and, later on, in Maranhão. It was some time after this that some was brought south to Rio de Janeiro, whence it quickly found its way into São Paulo and Minas

Geraes, and soon proved a source of very great wealth to all three States.

It is also grown in other States, from Ceará, in the north, to Santa Catharina, in the south, comprising an extent of territory ranging from 3° to 28° S. lat. The States of Bahia and Espirito Santo export it, but the principal coffee-producing States are, Rio de Janeiro, São Paulo and Minas Geraes, of which São Paulo ranks first as the great coffee-producing centre.

A coffee-plantation, or Cafezal, as it is called, is very interesting to visit. The shrubs, or, more correctly speaking, trees, for they are a good bit taller than a man, are all planted in parallel rows, with a sort of gangway or broad path down the middle. I well remember the first time I saw the slaves at work on one of these plantations: they all stood in a row, picking the berries, whilst the "Feitor," or Overseer, stood in the middle; and when they had finished picking the berries off one row of trees, at a sign from him, they all moved forward to the next row, and commenced working in the same way.

Of course it is somewhat different now, as there are no longer slaves to work on the plantations. Their place is taken, on most of the plantations, by Italian immigrants.

The coffee blossom is small and white, and the pod is commonly a bright red, something like a cherry in appearance, with two beans inside. The tree varies in height, according to the conditions of soil and cultivation and also according to quality. It will grow from two and a half metres to quite

double that height. The stem is upright and quite smooth, the leaves are of a dark green colour, and shiny. The blossom, which, as I have already mentioned, is white, has a pleasant perfume.

The cultivation of this tree requires much care, as the soil needs frequent attention and irrigation. As soon as the young trees are sufficiently grown for transplanting this is immediately done: they are hardly ever allowed to remain where they are first planted. It is usual to allow a distance of about four metres between the plants, and these spaces have to be kept free from weeds. The young trees require constant attention until they come to maturity, and have to be protected from the hot sun. They also require very careful pruning.

The shrub is very delicate and susceptible to sudden changes of weather, and is likewise affected by cold or by the wind. Rain, too, has a very prejudicial effect at certain stages in its development, whilst at others, viz., just before or just after the flowering period, and at the time of ripening, the want of rain may also be very unfavourable for the crop. A temperature of 95° Fahrenheit is also detrimental. It can stand a little cold, even as low as 32° Fahrenheit, provided there be no wind.

Like most things in this world, growing either for use or for pleasure, this shrub is subject to the attacks of certain pests and parasites, which have consequently to be guarded against. Some of these parasites attack it on the leaves, and are of a fungi-form nature. When they appear the diseased leaves have to be burned without delay, and the tree subjected to some aseptic treatment.

Besides these parasites there is a certain kind of worm that attacks the tree and causes great havoc, so much, indeed, that whole plantations have been known to be destroyed by its ravages. Another very serious enemy is an ant, which, if attacked at once, is not difficult to get rid of, although if operations are at all delayed it may give considerable trouble.

The trees develop their full bearing power in their sixth year, although the first crop may be gathered in the fourth year, and it is generally estimated that this covers all the working expenditure from the very commencement. The maximum yield is attained during the fourteenth to the eighteenth years, after which it gradually declines, but goes on bearing fruit up to the fortieth year.

The average weight of the beans collected from each tree does not amount to quite $\frac{3}{4}$ lb. in the State of Rio de Janeiro, but in São Paulo it has been known to exceed double that amount.

After the berries are all gathered they are placed in the tanks or troughs formed in the ground, and cemented over, and there subjected to a washing in running water, being raked about in the meantime. The berries become softened by this means, and are then ready for the machine in which they are opened. This machine frees the beans from the outer husk of the berry and turns them out with only a very fine skin covering them. They then undergo another washing to get rid of all adherent matter, after which they are spread out on the drying-ground where, as a rule, they dry very quickly, but great care is required as, after being exposed to the rays

of the sun, they deteriorate in quality should they be exposed to the rain.

It is essential that the coffee should be perfectly dried, as otherwise it would be liable to fermentation when lying in the stores and warehouses awaiting exportation.

There is another way of preparing the coffee by drying it in the berries, after which it goes through several machines. At first it is passed into hoppers and ventilators to clear it of some of the extraneous matter, and it is then sent through another machine and exposed to yet another ventilating apparatus, and finally it is taken to the polisher, whence it emerges with a fine lustre, and free from any and all impurities.

Some planters, after the preparation just described, have the coffee passed through another apparatus, by which the beans are assorted according to size and shape. By this means the beans are classified, and have various names given to them by which they are known on the market.

The coffee produced by the method last described of preparing the beans is considered by some people to be of superior flavour to that furnished by the washing process.

To obtain the beverage of the best possible flavour much care is needed in the roasting, a very critical operation, perfection in which can only be acquired by practice, whatever be the appliance or method adopted. Half a minute of time either way, whether too much or too little, is quite sufficient to affect the flavour, and the exact moment when to stop the roasting can only be discerned by the

experienced eye assisted by the aroma wafted by the fumes which rise abundantly from the beans during the process of roasting. It is equally important, moreover, that all the beans should be uniformly roasted, as a few underdone ones are enough to spoil the flavour of the whole lot ; likewise a few over-roasted ones will be equally detrimental to the result. I remember, while living in Pernambuco, we had a native servant who used to roast and grind the coffee freshly every morning for breakfast, so that we had it at its best.

During the years of 1893-95 the price of coffee rose so much as to influence many people in the State of São Paulo and elsewhere to establish new plantations, with the result that in a very few years the production was something phenomenal. In the "Safrá" (Harvest) of 1906-7 it reached the unprecedented total of twenty million four hundred thousand bags, each containing 60 Kgs., which is the standard weight, whilst the amount recorded from other coffee-producing countries was just under three million bags.

This enormous increase, coupled with the fact that no new markets were found for its consumption, caused a great fall in the price of coffee and brought about a crisis as the result of over-production.

Although this condition was mainly due to the copious over-production, there is yet another factor to be considered on the coffee market, and that is the powerful intermediate agents who speculate on a fall in coffee, and stand at nothing to achieve their purpose.

Many schemes were proposed, some of quite an elaborate nature, to relieve the trying conditions in which the coffee planters found themselves, several of which were abandoned almost as soon as they were tried. Finally the three States of São Paulo, Minas Geraes and Rio de Janeiro, which were most directly interested in the question, decided to enter into an agreement whereby they bound themselves to put a value on coffee with a view to establishing a fixed price for its sale.

This agreement was signed at Taubaté (State of São Paulo) on the 26th February, 1906, and is known as the "Convention of Taubaté," otherwise the "Valorisation Scheme." It was vigorously opposed by competent authorities in matters economic, and some of the clauses, which depended upon the authority of the Federal Legislature, were submitted to the National Congress, where they were approved, although not without modifications as to the intervention of the Union in its execution.

The terms of this Convention are as follows :—

"CONVENTION between the States of Rio de Janeiro, Minas Geraes and São Paulo, with the object of putting a value on coffee, regulating its trade, facilitating the increase of the consumption thereof and the creation of a Bank of Exchange for the purpose of determining the rate of exchange."

There are fourteen articles in this Convention, elaborating the principles for which it was instituted. I will merely give the translation of the last, which states :—

“THE contracting States recognize and accept the President of the Republic as Arbitrator in all differences which may arise amongst them with regard to the execution of this present Convention.”

A loan of £15,000,000 sterling was contracted for here in London for the purpose of establishing what is styled the “Caixa de Conversão ” (Caisse de Conversion in French ; there is, I think, no literal translation for the term in English), the object of which was to maintain a fixed rate of Exchange at fifteen pence.

The Caixa was, and is, especially intended to receive gold coin of legal currency and to give, in exchange for it, notes payable to bearer, of an equivalent value to the gold received, calculated at fifteen pence to the milréis.¹ These notes are legal tender, and are redeemable in gold at sight by the Caixa.

A very extraordinary and exceptional condition arose in 1910 : notwithstanding the establishment of this Caixa for the express purpose of maintaining a fixed rate of fifteen pence to the milréis, the foreign banks were giving bills at a higher rate, and this continued for some little time. The difference, of course, was subject to slight variations, but sometimes it amounted to more than twopence in the milréis, which naturally afforded a splendid opportunity to manipulate capital.

¹ One *milréis* (or *mil réis*) means one thousand reals, *mil* signifying a thousand, whilst *réis* is the Portuguese plural of *real*. This plural formation is used only for the coin ; the adjective *real* (royal) forms its plural in the regular way, i.e., *reaes*.

The Government of Brazil, in its desire to foster the commerce of the country, took very active measures, and established a commission called the "Comissão de Expensão do Brazil" for the express purpose of popularizing Brazilian products in foreign countries, more particularly in Europe, and the article they have most especially endeavoured to increase the consumption of is coffee. In order to render practical assistance in this direction a "Sociedade de Propaganda" (Society for canvassing or making propaganda) was formed, subsidized, I believe, by the State of São Paulo, for the purpose of placing coffee, already roasted and ground, on the European markets.

This association was formed towards the end of the year 1908, and the coffee introduced by its efforts was called "Fazenda Coffee."¹ The coffee, done up in half-pound tins, with a State Government label on each one, was offered for sale here in England originally at one shilling and fourpence the pound, or eightpence the half-pound tin. This price, however, was gradually, but rapidly, raised to one shilling and tenpence the pound, which I do not think the most likely way to increase the demand for it, excellent though it is. At the former price of one shilling and fourpence the pound, even, there is a great difference as compared with the value of coffee at Santos, the great port of embarkation, where it costs two pounds sterling

¹ Since writing the above I have been assured most positively that the coffee which is still sold here as "Fazenda Coffee" no longer comes from Brazil. If this is so it should be a matter for the Government of the State of São Paulo to investigate.

per bag of sixty kilogrammes, and therefore works out at rather less than fourpence a pound, consequently leaving a fair margin for the expenses of roasting and grinding, freight and profit for both the importer and the retailer, including the duty of twopence on the pound recovered in this so-called Free Trade country which levies a tax on an article of food, and allows motor-cars and pianos and many other manufactured goods to come in free.

Santos, as I have just mentioned, is the great port for the embarkation of coffee. It is the chief port of the State of São Paulo, and formerly had a very bad name; in fact, it was known as the graveyard of European sailors, but it is completely altered in this respect now, owing to the great and radical changes and improvements which have been carried out by the Companhia de Docas de Santos in the way of building docks and quays, reclaiming considerable tracts of land which were formerly nothing but marsh and quagmire, and consequently very unhealthy, especially as the sun's rays are extremely powerful in this latitude. Owing to all these fortunate alterations Santos, from being quite the worst port on the coast, has now become one of the best.

In the season many steamers may be seen all along the quays loading coffee. The last time I was there I counted, from the deck of the *Amazon* (Royal Mail S.P. Co.), no fewer than twelve, and we took two thousand sacks on board ourselves. At these times the entire place seems to be given over to coffee, and it is nothing but coffee, coffee, coffee wherever you may go. The peculiar odour of it

pervades the whole town and seems to cling to and permeate everything. It is not a very pleasant odour either ; notwithstanding that the coffee when prepared for the table has such a delicious aroma, that of the raw bean is quite the reverse.

Santos is connected with the capital, São Paulo, by a railway which is, perhaps, unique in its way : along part of the line the trains ascend and descend by means of chains worked by stationary engines, of which there are four. Each engine works two trains, one being drawn up and the other let down simultaneously by means of the same chain. On this part of the line, which is called the "Alto da Serra" (the whole range of hills is called "Serra do Cubatão"), the scenery is exceedingly picturesque and pleasing to the eye, although to a nervous person it might be not a little alarming to be drawn up along the side of a precipice in this manner.



RAILWAY STATION, SÃO PAULO.

CHAPTER X

Capital of the State of São Paulo on the tropical limit—Great elevation above sea-level—Cooler than Rio de Janeiro—Temperature very variable—A very prosperous city—Connected by rail with Rio de Janeiro—Many English in São Paulo—Brazilian Navy organized by an Englishman—Lord Cochrane—Ypiranga—Independence of Brazil proclaimed in 1822—Beginning of the Empire—First Brazilian Parliament—Dom Pedro I abdicates in favour of his son—The new Emperor only five years of age—The Regency—Dom Pedro II declared of legal age in 1840—Government established on the English model—Difficult problem of slavery—Tax levied to free them—Raising of tram-car fare causes much indignation—Car overturned and burned—Tax charged on travelling by Transatlantic boats—Some owners free their slaves voluntarily—The Countess of Parahybuna did so—Offered her slaves land to cultivate—Not one remained—Slaves freed by Law in 1888—Much discontent among the planters—Compensation demanded—Is refused—Curious saying, “Para Inglez vêr”—Suggested explanation of it—Dom Pedro II in Europe—The Princess, his daughter, as Regent—Character of the late Emperor—He sends Carlos Gomes to Europe at his own expense—Bronze statue to Dom Pedro II in gardens at Petropolis—People desire that his remains should be taken to Brazil—A Brazilian visitor to London expresses surprise at finding no record of his country at Madame Tussaud’s—Great Republican propaganda made by Silva Jardim in 1889—The Princess visits several places where he had addressed the people.

THE city of São Paulo, the capital of the State of the same name, stands just on the tropical limit, and consequently very little south of Rio de Janeiro, but it enjoys a cooler climate, owing to its great height above the sea-level The varia-

tions in temperature are very considerable, even within the space of a few hours sometimes.

This handsome and prosperous city is connected with Rio de Janeiro by rail, and although the journey is a very long one, the tediousness of it is somewhat beguiled by the magnificence of the scenery through which one travels. Generally speaking, however, I must say that railway travelling in this country is not very pleasant, on account of the great amount of dust which is raised, particularly in dry weather, and which settles everywhere, on everything, and even gets into one's ears. The ladies have some slight advantage here, in that they wear veils, although the dust is so fine that it will penetrate even through them.

Speaking as an Englishman, it gives me great satisfaction to be able to state that the most European of Brazil's cities is the one that contains the greatest number of Englishmen. In the city of São Paulo they number over a thousand, whereas in the other cities which I have visited they never numbered more than a hundred, even including the children, and in some places I was the only Englishman. I make exception, of course, of Rio de Janeiro, although even there the number is far below that in São Paulo.

I imagine it is not generally known in England that the Brazilian navy was organized by an Englishman—Lord Cochrane.

In the early part of last century Captain Cochrane, as he then was, left this country in anger, the reason for which is narrated in a very interesting book recently published (1911) entitled *An Irish Beauty*

of the *Regency*, compiled from "Mes Souvenirs," the unpublished journals of the Hon. Mrs. Calvert, 1789-1822, by Mrs. Warrenne Blake.

Lord Cochrane went to South America, and, after having organized the Chilian Navy, went to Brazil and there performed a like service. In the year 1823, following that in which Brazil had seceded from Portugal and declared its independence, Lord Cochrane, commanding the squadron he had formed, chased the Portuguese squadron across the Atlantic to the mouth of the Tagus and captured prizes of great value.

Soon after this, knowing that the Portuguese in Maranhão were hostile, Cochrane set sail for that province, and succeeded in calming all opposition to the independence, and having taken precautions against further trouble, returned to Rio de Janeiro, and was given the title of Marquez de Maranhão (Marquis of Maranhão), and received from the National Treasury, in remuneration for his services, and as his share in the prize money, the sum of two hundred contos (200,000,000 Rs.), which at that time would have been approximately £40,000, after which he returned to his native land.

In 1902 when the Brazilian war-ship *Floriano* visited this country some of the officers went to Westminster Abbey, where Lord Cochrane lies, and placed a wreath on his tomb, although this is not the only time that this graceful act has been performed by officers of the Brazilian Navy in honour of his memory.

It was in the State of São Paulo, on the now historic plain of Ypiranga, that the Independence

of Brazil was proclaimed, on the 7th September, 1822, the country then becoming an Empire under a Prince of the house of Bragança, the reigning family of Portugal.

Dom Pedro I, as he then became—the father of the late Emperor—was given the choice between returning to Portugal or remaining in Brazil, and he preferred the latter course, although, had he returned to Portugal, he would eventually have become King thereof.

The first Brazilian Parliament assembled in 1826. During the whole of the reign of Dom Pedro I, however, the opposition was in the majority, and the relations between the Emperor and the Parliament were strained and frequently stormy.

At Rio de Janeiro, liberal, and even republican, ideas were rife, feeling between the Portuguese and the native elements ran high, and several disastrous encounters took place in consequence in the streets of the capital. A portion of the troops joined the popular movement, and the Emperor, at last weary of the struggle, abdicated in favour of his son, Pedro, and left the country for Europe on the 7th April, 1831.

Dom Pedro II was only five years of age when, by his father's abdication, he succeeded to the imperial throne of Brazil, and, until the year 1840, the country was governed by a Regency. Although disorders were still frequent and several attempts were made to overthrow the government, the Regent, Diogo Feijó, succeeded in putting them down with a very strong hand.

In 1840 the young Emperor, then fifteen years

old, was declared, by Act of Parliament, to be of legal age, and Dom Pedro II commenced his long and illustrious reign which lasted until the 15th November, 1889.

Under this reign Constitutional Government was developed, on the English lines, and two parties, called Liberal and Conservative respectively, were organized. Congress was composed of two Chambers, the Lower House consisting of Deputies elected by popular vote, and the Upper of Senators appointed by the Emperor for life.

One of the most difficult problems—perhaps I should say, the most difficult—that the Government had to deal with, and one that was constantly recurring during many years, was the Slave Question.

In every Parliament there was always some one who would raise his voice, in season and out of season, and in face of all opposition, urging that measures should be adopted for the purpose of stopping the traffic in slaves, thus wiping out the blot that rested upon the Brazilian nation. In 1851 the Slave Trade was suppressed, that is to say, no more slaves were allowed to be brought into the country from Africa: there remained yet the far greater problem of dealing with the slaves already in the country. In 1871, during the administration of the Visconde de Rio Branco, father of the late Baron of the same name, a law was passed by which all children born of slaves from that time forward should be free. This law is still known as the Law of the 28th September.

In 1883, when Affonso Celso, the Visconde de Ouro Preto, was at the head of the Government, a

law was enacted increasing by ten per cent. all existing taxes and duties, and levying additional ones, even on passenger fares, for the purpose of raising a fund to free the slaves. By virtue of this law the tram-car fare, which was two hundred réis, was increased to two hundred and twenty réis. It was called the "Imposto do Vintem," or Vintem Tax. The Vintem is twenty réis, or about a halfpenny in English currency. The public became very justly indignant at this vexatious measure, many people refused to pay the additional "Vintem," some of the tram-cars were overturned, others were set fire to with the aid of kerosene oil, and finally the "Imposto do Vintem" was put an end to. Only in this particular case, however, was the new tax opposed, and although the slaves were all set free later by a law enacted in the month of May, 1888,¹ this tax was still in force when I left the country in 1909, and I have no knowledge of its having been repealed yet. Even the passengers leaving the ports of Brazil by the Transatlantic steamers for Europe were liable to this additional charge on their fares.

The magnitude of the problem the Government had to solve will be the more readily appreciated when it is understood that about two-thirds of the adult population, that is to say, of the adult free population, were slave-owners. In accordance with the growing spirit of the time the new generation, and some of the older generation too, were anxious to help in bringing about the freedom of the slaves by degrees, and many were the means and devices

¹ The 13th May, 1888.



A FOREST PATH, SÃO PAULO.

From "Brazil" in 1912.

resorted to to effect this. On the occasion of a marriage in the family, for instance, one or two favourite slaves would be given their freedom. Very often on the demise of their owner, some of the slaves would receive their liberty in accordance with the terms of the will of the deceased. Truth compels me to state that, save in rare instances, these slaves were always men and women past the meridian of life, and who consequently had already given their best work. There were, however, honourable exceptions, to wit : the Condessa (Countess) de Parahybuna gave all the slaves on her estate their liberty, and wishing to provide them with a means of earning their livelihood now that she herself would no longer be bound to provide them with food, clothes and shelter, she offered to give each one a plot of land on her own "Fazenda," on the sole condition that they were to cultivate it—for their own profit, of course. Not one remained to work. This occurred in the State of Minas Geraes in 1884 whilst I was there.

The passing of the law in 1888 abolishing slavery at one fell swoop and the subsequent refusal of the Government to entertain proposals for compensation to the former slave-owners naturally brought great loss to the planters, who thenceforward would have to employ paid labour on their plantations. The discontent thus caused made them more disposed to lend a willing ear to the advocates of republicanism who were going about the country making propaganda of their ideas, although after the Republic was established, and the slave-owners' claim for compensation was again

brought forward, some one (if my memory serves me rightly, Dr., now Senator, Ruy Barbosa) very forcibly remarked in Congress that before the late masters could be compensated, the former slaves ought to be for having been held in captivity so long, and there the matter ended.

In connexion with this subject I must mention a very curious saying often to be heard in Brazil : " Para Inglês vêr," which literally translated means : " For the Englishman to see." When first I heard it, it surprised and puzzled me not a little, and I quite failed to grasp its meaning, until I learned that it was applied in reference to things which are not at all what they seem to be, which makes one think, somehow, of " Alice in Wonderland." As I have already stated, it is an expression which is heard quite often, for occasions are by no means lacking when it can be suitably applied, but the extraordinary thing about it is that no one seems to know the origin of it, and I have been asked myself by more than one Brazilian if I could explain it. After many years, however, I met a man—and he was the only one—who suggested the following as what he believed to be the origin of the saying : about the year 1845, or 1846, I am not sure which, the British Minister in Rio de Janeiro made strong representations to the Brazilian Government in reference to the Slave Traffic, urging them to take measures to put an end to it, and so persistent was he in his demands that a law was passed to that effect, but it was never put into execution. So the law was for the Englishman to see, and nothing more. A very feasible explanation.

The saying persists to this day, and is much in use for matters of a kindred nature.

When the law was passed freeing the slaves the Emperor, Dom Pedro II, was in Europe in very bad health, and this measure, which was at once an act of mercy and a political *tour de force*, was put into effect under the rule of his daughter, the Princess Isabel, who signed the law as Regent of the Empire.

The Princess Isabel, eldest and only surviving daughter of the Emperor of Brazil, and wife of Prince Gaston d'Orleans, Comte d'Eu, would have succeeded her father on the throne of Brazil, had not the Republic intervened.

For some years before the end of the monarchy republican principles and ideas had been steadily gaining ground. At first they were discussed only slightly, but later on with increasing vehemence and insistence, not so much from any feeling against the Emperor, as against the system.

Dom Pedro II, as a man, was widely respected and much beloved by his subjects. Innumerable acts of kindness and benevolence were well known to have been practised by him, and any penniless student or struggling artist was sure of bounteous assistance if once his case were laid before the Emperor.

To give one example amongst very many : Carlos Gomes, the composer of the Brazilian Opera "Il Guarany," having shown great promise whilst still quite young, was sent to Italy to study music, and remained there for some time, the Emperor defraying all his expenses out of his private purse.

In February, 1911, a bronze statue was unveiled

in the beautiful gardens at Petropolis, to the memory of Dom Pedro II, a remarkable tribute, on the part of a Republican people, to the memory of a deposed monarch.

Yet another and even greater proof of the high regard in which he was held is the ever-increasing demand on the part of Brazilians of all political denominations that his remains, which at present lie in Portugal, be carried back to Brazil.¹ "He was one of our greatest men," they are of one voice in saying, "and it is meet that his remains should lie here in Brazil."

And this reminds me that a Brazilian friend of mine who came to Europe last year (1912) with his wife, and spent some time in London, paid a visit to Madame Tussaud's, amongst other places of interest, and expressed surprise at not finding any Brazilian represented there. Although the late Emperors of China and Japan are there in effigy, there is no wax figure of the late Emperor of Brazil. This omission is, I think, a fair subject for comment, considering that Dom Pedro II was widely known and respected, universally admitted to be one of the wisest and best rulers of his day, and had, moreover, visited England more than once. Besides which, being a grandson of King John VI of Portugal, he was allied to our own Royal Family, for, be it remembered, the wife of Charles II was a Princess of the house of Bragança, and an English Princess, Philippa of Lancaster, daughter of John of Gaunt and sister of our Henry IV, was married

¹ Dom Pedro II died in Paris on the 5th December, 1891.

to King John I of Portugal as far back as the end of the fourteenth century.

Another very noticeable omission is that of Santos Dumont, a Brazilian whose name was conspicuous as an aviator in 1901, and whose feats in aviation have often been before the public since that time. In his dirigible balloon he made the circuit of the Eiffel Tower, and made other notable flights. He has also done very much to further the progress and development of aerial navigation, on which he has expended large sums of money, being a man of substance. Nevertheless, at Madame Tussaud's there are one or two airmen represented who are no more widely known than he, perhaps not so well.

But this is a digression.

As the Emperor had no son, he would have been succeeded, in the ordinary course of events, by his daughter, the Princess Isabel, as I have already remarked, but the Republicans had two points which they alleged against this lady: one, that her husband was a French Prince, and they did not wish to be ruled by a foreigner; and two, she was a deeply religious woman, and always apt to be influenced by her spiritual advisers. At this time a wave of strong anti-religious feeling was sweeping over the country, and even those who remained staunch in their faith were adverse, generally speaking, to the State being very much under the influence of the Church. Consequently, the propagandists made great capital of the Princess's religious tendencies and this was one of the battle-horses that ultimately led the Republican party to victory.

In 1888 the Emperor was in Europe in very bad health, this, indeed, being the cause of his absence from the country, and the idea of his daughter's coming to the throne was not contemplated with favour.

In 1889 a strong propaganda was made in favour of republicanism, especially by one enthusiastic Brazilian named Antonio da Silva Jardim, who travelled from province to province along the coast, visiting the capital and principal cities in them, delivering addresses which were well received on the whole, more particularly by the younger members of the communities he visited. And one thing that called for special notice was, that after the departure of Sr. Silva Jardim the Princess Isabel, together with her husband, the Comte d'Eu, appeared at some of the principal places he had visited. At some, I believe, their intention was to be first on the scene, but Silva Jardim, I think, always frustrated that.

Had she been suitably supported, the presence of this gracious lady might have gone far towards counteracting the effect produced by the republican propagandists, but her husband never enjoyed any degree of popularity, and her sons were quite young boys, not yet of an age to second their Imperial mother in her delicate task of endeavouring to create and cement a feeling in favour of a continuance of the then existing régime.

CHAPTER XI

The revolt of the Army on the 15th November, 1889—Marshal Deodoro da Fonseca requests the Emperor to leave the country—Announces that the monarchy is extinct—Baron de Ladario fired on—Many people are enthusiastic at the change—Strange notions of equality—Deodoro da Fonseca head of the Provisional Government—Promulgation of the new Constitution—Deodoro chosen President—No harmony among the new rulers of the land—Great discontent amongst the leaders—Silva Jardim—He leaves the country and naturalizes himself a Portuguese—Falls into the crater of Vesuvius—Disastrous measure of the Minister of Finance—Establishment of Banks of issue—Exchange falls in consequence—Country flooded with paper money—Congress forcibly dissolved by the President who assumes the Dictatorship—His act provokes great hostility—Self-appointed Dictator compelled to resign—Marshal Floriano Peixoto assumes the vacant presidential chair—This is in flagrant disregard of the Constitution—Revolution breaks out in Rio Grande do Sul—Revolt of the Navy in the Bay of Rio de Janeiro—Floriano Peixoto sends to the United States of North America to purchase a man-of-war—It arrives in Bahia and founders—The Government party adopts the title of "Partido da Legalidade"—This is just what it was not—Floriano beats down all opposition—The Civil War in Rio Grande do Sul continues—Money apparently abundant—Many speculative schemes—Great collapse—Severe crisis—Political discontent—Unwise legislation—Over-speculation—The whole country depressed—The President succeeding Floriano Peixoto was Dr. Prudente de Moraes—An attempt is made on his life—The Minister for War, Marshal Carlos Machado de Bittencourt, is killed in trying to defend the President—At the end of 1897 Exchange drops to 5½—The Funding Loan arranged for in London—The next President, Dr. Campos Salles, has to burn much of the paper money—This produces beneficial results—Exchange rises—When it reaches 15 a proposition

is made to fix that as the Par value—This proposition emanates from the coffee-planters.

ON the 15th November, 1889, came the great change, brought about by the revolt of the army, or, at least, that part of it stationed in Rio de Janeiro, led by Marechal (Marshal) Deodoro da Fonseca, who after visiting the palace, accompanied by others, and requesting Dom Pedro to leave the country with all possible speed, announced the Monarchy extinct and proclaimed a Republic in its place.

Dom Pedro had no alternative but to depart. No movement was made that could possibly have effected anything in favour of his remaining.

The Baron de Ladario, who was a Cabinet Minister¹ at the time, was driving in his carriage, and about to visit the Emperor, not knowing at the moment, I believe, what had taken place, when he was called upon to halt by a lieutenant, which he refused to do, whereupon the officer fired at him. That was the only resistance, and the only shot fired that day. The baron, fortunately, was not badly wounded.

After the proclamation of the Republic it was curious to note the extraordinary amount of satisfaction and confidence continually given expression to—more particularly by the younger members of the community—that everything was going to be wonderfully improved by the mere change, as if grievances, fancied or real, would automatically redress themselves.

¹ Minister of Marine.



AVENUE, NOVEMBER 15 PARÁ

Evidently they did not realize the fact that the only material difference was the departure of one man, with his family, from the scene, whose difficult task it had often been to conciliate where rivalries or conflicting interests were confronted, and that those remaining on the stage were made no better by the change.

That such a sudden improvement should take place, no calm and dispassionately minded person could possibly have anticipated, as the results soon proved, for, as is perhaps almost inevitable in such radical changes, the early days most certainly gave no evidence of an approaching Utopia.

Amongst enthusiastic republicans I have often noticed that they speak in a way as if one man were, not only as good as another, but much better—some decidedly so.

I may here quite appropriately relate a fragment of a conversation my wife once had in the time of the monarchy with a lady of our acquaintance, the wife of a lieutenant in the army, who was of avowedly strong, or so-called, republican principles. Discoursing on equality, this lady remarked that she would not admit that any one could be of superior rank to herself, whereupon my wife asked her if she recognized her mulatta maidservant as her equal, which idea she, of course, indignantly disclaimed.

That is about the measure of a great deal of the talked-of equality, especially when proclaimed with overmuch enthusiasm.

But, to return to our topic of the great change in the administration of affairs: Marshal Deodoro

da Fonseca, after the *coup d'état* already referred to, placed himself at the head of the Provisional Government, and organized the Constituent Assembly, which compiled the new Constitution for the Republic, the promulgation of which took place on the twenty-fourth day of February, 1891. At the election following upon this, he was chosen to be the first constitutional President. This position, however, he was not destined to hold for very long. It was soon painfully evident that harmony did not reign among the would-be rulers of the land.

Some of the principal members of the Republican party—one of whom I would like to make special mention of, Benjamin Constant,¹ a man highly respected—undoubtedly had the interest of the nation at heart, and devoted years of time and energy to the furthering of their scheme of reform; but that all who had a hand in the direction of affairs were influenced by a like feeling I should not like to assert. The way affairs were managed—or mismanaged—soon caused grave discontent, most especially amongst those who had been the leaders in the movement advocating the reform. This was notably the case with Sr. Silva Jardim, to whom I have alluded in the previous chapter. After

¹ Benjamin Constant Botelho de Magalhães, generally known by his two first names. He was at one time tutor to the sons of the Princess Isabel. It was said that profound disappointment at the trend affairs took after the proclamation of the Republic preyed upon his mind, and caused his death, or accelerated it. He was said to suffer from some cardiac complaint. There was a story going round of his having flung an inkpot at Marshal Deodoro at one of their semi-official meetings.

having been one of the most indefatigable workers in the cause, he left the country very soon after the change he had helped to bring about had been effected, in disgust, as it was generally believed, with the result, and went to Portugal, where he naturalized himself a Portuguese, in order the more completely to accentuate his rupture with his native land. He then went on a visit to Italy, and whilst there made the ascent of Mount Vesuvius, into the crater of which he fell, sharing with Pliny the Elder the gruesome distinction of having this volcano for his grave. And it was quite a moot question at the time whether it was purely accident or whether he had let himself go. That, however, must forever remain unanswered.

Instead of there being wisdom in many councillors, I think conflicting opinions may often arise therefrom and lead to the adoption of measures that are certainly not wise. I merely speak from what I have observed.

One measure adopted under the new régime was notoriously disastrous, as it was bound to be. The Minister of Finance, Dr. Ruy Barbosa,¹ whose term of office ran from the 15th November, 1889, to the 22nd January, 1891, had a scheme which he was evidently determined to carry out, notwithstanding that he was urgently besought by the Deputies for the State of Rio Grande do Sul not to do so. This was the establishment of several new banks with power to issue notes without any gold deposit to guarantee them.

¹ Now Senator Ruy Barbosa.

The result of this measure was that the country was literally flooded with paper money, with the very natural consequence that the rate of Exchange fell, and continued falling with alarming rapidity. In 1889, the last year of the Empire, it had reached 28, which means that it was one penny above Par, and remained so until the fall of the monarchy. This was no mere transient phase of prosperity, for it stood firm for some considerable time, a state of affairs which had existed but seldom through many years, and then not for so long a period. But this condition was soon brought to an end by the fatal measure just referred to. However, more of this anon.

In the meantime matters were going from bad to worse, so much so that Congress was forcibly dissolved by the President, who then assumed the Dictatorship, an act which very naturally provoked an immense amount of hostility, coming, as it did, at the very commencement of the new conditions that were supposed to confer equality upon all citizens. As this feeling of hostility became more and more intense, the President and self-appointed Dictator was soon compelled to resign, which he did in the month of November, 1891, the same year in which he had been elected, whereupon the Vice-President, who was also a soldier, Marshal Floriano Peixoto, assumed the now vacant post, and continued to hold it in flagrant disregard of the Constitution, which declares :—

“Should a vacancy occur in the Presidential chair from any cause whatsoever, before two years

of the Presidential term of office have expired, a new election shall take place.”¹

I have had occasion, more than once, to point out this Clause in the Constitution to Brazilians with whom I have been discussing this point, and I have noticed two things: one, that they none of them seemed to be aware of the aforesaid Clause in the Constitution, and two, that they have invariably replied (if they were partisans of Marshal Peixoto): “Oh, but the Assembly voted that he should do so,” which statement is perfectly correct in itself; the anomaly lay in the fact that in so doing the Assembly arrogated to themselves a power they certainly did not possess, for the Constitution does not confer any such power or authority upon them.

The new President began ruling with a very strong hand, and some tyrannical measures were put into operation. Whether they were necessary or not I will not try to discuss, but some of his subordinates outraged all ideas of equity, and in the troublous times that followed, many acts of unprecedented barbarity were committed.

A presidency assumed in such a manner naturally opened the way for a revolt which was not long in declaring itself.

In the State of Rio Grande do Sul, which has always manifested an independent spirit, a revolution broke out in 1892, and lasted for nearly three

¹ Pag. 19. Sec. II. *Do Poder Executivo*. Cap. I. Do Presidente e do Vice-Presidente. Constituição da Republica dos Estados Unidos do Brasil. Rio de Janeiro. Imprensa Nacional. 1903.

years. In September, 1893, nearly the whole of the Navy rose in revolt, and this in the very Bay of Rio de Janeiro, under the presidential eye.

To combat this latter disturbance, the Government being short of ships, the President sent to the United States of North America to make good the deficiency, and a vessel (the *Cid*) was purchased which claimed to be fitted with some new device calculated to play sad havoc with the enemy in warfare. Its advent was heralded in Brazil with alarming accounts of its death-dealing powers and of the destruction it was going to wreak amongst the fleet in revolt. All that it did, however, was to quietly founder as soon as it reached Bahia, without having entered into action at all—without even reaching Rio de Janeiro.

Why it foundered was never satisfactorily explained to the public. There had been no storm, no other shipping suffered on that occasion, yet the *Cid* went down and was entirely lost. The public therefore came very naturally to the conclusion that it went down because it was unseaworthy, and that the President had not had the best of the bargain in the purchase he had made. The price paid was not, I think, ever publicly stated, but it was generally believed to have been a high one, even had the vessel possessed the qualities claimed for it.¹

I may remark here that during this time of conflict the Government Party adopted the designation of "Partido da Legalidade" (Party of Legality, or

¹ There is no imputation in this against the Government of the United States of North America: the transaction was a private one.



BRAZILIAN SUPER-DREADNOUGHT *São Paulo*.

From "Brazil in 1912."

Legal Party). That is precisely what it was not, legality being the very quality which was lacking. Perhaps that was why it was so widely proclaimed; for otherwise no one would have known it.

Floriano Peixoto succeeded, after some time, in beating down all opposition immediately confronting him, that is to say, in quelling the revolt of the Navy, although the civil war in Rio Grande do Sul still continued until after his term of office expired.

With money apparently abundant and seemingly so easily acquired, by reason of the new banks already referred to, the idea evidently prevailed in many minds that a new and easy road to wealth had been opened out before the public, and this led to many speculative schemes—some of the wildest nature—being proposed and subscribed to by the overcredulous in their confidence and eagerness to share in the fancied prosperity. The débâcle of the numerous enterprises which were floated on the Brazilian market was not long in coming with the continual falling of Exchange, a very serious factor for a country which imports so great a proportion of manufactured goods, and in about three years' time a complete collapse had occurred. Exchange, which at the fall of the monarchy, in 1889, had stood at 28, fell to between 11 and 12 in 1892.

During this time and the years immediately ensuing a very serious crisis was passed through, which affected the entire nation, for, besides political discontent, great changes of a financial and economic

nature were at work, the result of unwise legislation, over-speculation and a certain amount of unscrupulousness which brought about disastrous consequences for every one. So widespread and far-reaching was this, in effect, that a general state of depression reigned over the whole country and involved all who were in it.

The President who followed Marshal Floriano Peixoto was Dr. Prudente de Moraes, the first civilian to hold that office, a native of the State of São Paulo. He succeeded in pacifying the revolutionaries in Rio Grande do Sul, and gave several proofs of prudence and sound judgment during his administration. In spite of this, however, and of the evident desire he manifested to further the welfare of the nation, an attempt was made on his life, which, fortunately for him, failed in its purpose, although Marshal Carlos Machado de Bittencourt, the Minister for War at the time, who was with the President when the outrage was committed, rushed upon the assailant, receiving a wound which resulted in the loss of his own life. This happened in November, 1897.

It was during this presidential term that Exchange, already low at the commencement of it, kept falling lower and lower until, at the close of 1897, after just eight years of Republican administration, it touched the point of $5\frac{5}{8}$, and paper money was now worth only a fraction more than one-fifth of its nominal value, which means that the Brazilian milréis, instead of being worth twenty-eight pence, was only worth five and five-eighths of a penny. A sovereign, which at the time of the Empire could be

purchased for nine milréis, or, during the last year of the Imperial administration, for eight and a half milréis, could not now be purchased for less than forty-five milréis.

All this, needless to say, caused most serious difficulties in commerce, and occasioned much loss amongst private people. And the man who was instrumental in bringing about this financial catastrophe is often spoken of in Brazil as one of their ablest men. As a public speaker he may have been, but as a financier he gave no proof of sound judgment. But then, we need not go to Brazil to find that : we have an example much nearer home.

It was during the last year of Dr. Prudente de Moraes' term of office that a loan called the " Funding Loan " was raised here in London to help the Government out of its difficulties and save the nation from positive bankruptcy.

Payments in specie were suspended, and the Government had to ask for time to meet their engagements in Europe. This state of affairs in no way reflected upon the President then in office, but was the natural consequence of what had taken place immediately before.

In 1898 Dr. Campos Salles, also a native of the State of São Paulo, succeeded to the presidency, and on him devolved the onerous task of withdrawing from circulation some of the superabundant paper currency and destroying it, in conformity with the conditions upon which the loan had been effected : of re-establishing the credit of the country and of endeavouring to put its disorganized finances into order.

The beneficial effect of the measure now adopted gradually became apparent, and, with the beginning of the new century, a decided improvement set in.

The new "Bancos Emissores" (Banks of Issue) which had been established on such an impossible basis, or, perhaps it would be more correct to say, without any basis at all, had closed their doors, and the Government became responsible for the notes they had authorized the circulation of, and now had the task of burning.

In three years from the time when the rate of Exchange had fallen to its lowest point it rose again to nearly double what it had been, which naturally gave rise to great satisfaction after the appalling conditions that had existed previously.

Fortunately the rise in the rate of Exchange continued, with the result, of course, that the currency increased automatically in its purchasing power; but, although this is greatly improved, the depreciation is still considerable compared with its value when Exchange is at Par.

Finally, in 1905, it rose to 16, the average for the year being between 15 and 16. Notwithstanding the better conditions now reigning, there was still some want of confidence shown as to the stability of the rate of Exchange, and a suggestion was brought forward for altering the Par value of the milréis and adopting 15 for the standard, as an unstable rate of Exchange is, of course, very prejudicial to commerce in a general way, however much individual speculators may profit by its fluctuations, for it is just these variations that

render exact calculations impossible for general business transactions.

The agitation in favour of this change was, I believe, mainly, if not entirely, brought about by the coffee-planters, who were in a very bad way just at that time, owing to the fall in the price of coffee.¹

¹ See Chapter IX, page 100.

CHAPTER XII

All titles of nobility abolished with the advent of the Republic—The people who possess them appear to prefer to keep them all the same—Great ambition to have the right to be called "Dr."—National flag altered—The old much handsomer than the new—Holidays altered by Republicans—Capital punishment abolished—An increase in the crime of murder—The case of Motta Coqueiro—The Emperor ever afterwards refused to sign a death-warrant—Duelling declared illegal—Challenges begin to be made—Amusing account of one—Pattern of postage stamps modified several times—Repudiation of the former ones—Public money disappearing from various Governmental departments—This loss greatly exceeds what Dom Pedro II received from the Treasury—These defalcations do not occur in the State of Rio Grande do Sul—Non-attendance of the Senators and Deputies now they are paid so much per day—Assembly much prolonged—Business hurried through at the end of the session now—Great number of public employees—Especially in the Custom Houses—Autocratic manner in which duties are levied in the various Custom Houses—Some of the men who have come forward within the last few years have shown great disinterestedness—Hopes that the number of such may increase.

OF course, with the abolition of the imperial régime and the inauguration of the Republic all titles of nobility were abolished likewise. Nevertheless, the late Baron de Rio Branco, who was Foreign Minister at the time of his decease,¹ and who had held the portfolio for Foreign Affairs during three successive presidencies, was always spoken of

¹ In 1912.

by his title. And there are also some titles out there which have been purchased in Portugal: whether they are valid or not may be a question for lawyers to decide, but there seems to be a disposition on the part of the holders thereof to stick to them, and nobody appears inclined to dispute their right to do so. In future I suppose those who wish to possess titles—and no amount of abolition by law will abolish the desire to possess them—will have to seek them of the Holy Roman Empire, seeing that Portugal is no longer in a position to supply them.

However, now that titles of nobility are abolished that of Dr. is widely coveted. To have the right to be styled Sr. Dr. is the ambition of the average young Brazilian, and there are three avenues open to him whereby he can attain to this distinction, namely, Medicine, the Law and the Engineering profession. Many a young Brazilian man who is going to make politics his profession takes his degree in Medicine, or Law, as a preliminary, merely to have the right to style himself Dr., and not with the intention of practising as a physician. On the other hand, it is not uncommon for a lawyer to be styled Dr. when he has only taken his Bachelor's degree. Great is the power of these two little letters before one's name in a country that has done away with titles that savour of feudalism, and with the less educated class a "Sr. Dr." is easily accredited with more wisdom than he may possess.

The national flag was, of course, one of the first things to be altered. The imperial coat of arms in the centre, with coffee leaves on one side

and tobacco leaves on the other, formed an exceedingly handsome flag in the old Empire days. Now the centre of the Brazilian flag bears a globe with the words "Ordem e Progresso" (Order and Progress) across it. Speaking as an Englishman I am free to confess that I preferred the old flag: recognizing the modern spirit which inspires the new Brazilians I trust the words they have chosen for their motto may bring them all the order and progress their magnificent land so well deserves.

The national flag was not the only thing that was altered: the military uniforms were modified several times before a style could be found that would suit the new taste, or accord with the new ideas.

Yet another alteration: one of the first acts, indeed, of the Republican Government was to do away with the Holidays established by the Church, and to appoint new ones commemorating Republican events, instead. As, however, it is not easy to abolish, by an act of legislature, a custom which the people have observed regularly for some generations, [especially in connexion with religious convictions, it happens that the people have continued to keep the old Holidays and have accepted the new ones as well, the net result being a double number of holidays.

Capital punishment was likewise abolished, and penal servitude for life substituted for it, as it was considered that the former was quite too barbarous a method of punishment to be tolerated in a free and enlightened country. The consequence of this measure, intended as one of clemency, is that murder

has increased to such an extent that it would not be surprising if Brazil, like France, which country is often taken for a model there, were to find it expedient to resort to the extreme penalty again as a deterrent.

In connexion with capital punishment (which, of course, only applied to criminals guilty of murder), I take this opportunity of stating that although it was the penalty imposed by the law, under the imperial régime, yet for many years it had never been put into execution, as, after the sentence had been pronounced by the judge, it was necessary for the Emperor to give his sanction, and this he would never do after a case which occurred in Minas Geraes, when justice miscarried grievously, and a man of the name of Motta Coqueiro, against whom the circumstantial evidence seemed very clear, was hanged for a murder which a negro confessed some years later, on his death-bed, to have committed. Since that time Dom Pedro II always refused to sign a death-warrant, the sentence being thereupon commuted to penal servitude for life.

But, to continue with the alterations that were made. Duelling was made illegal, and it is a remarkable fact that, although before the act was passed making it illegal I had never heard of a duel being fought, no sooner was this act made law than three challenges were made, which is an object-lesson on the contrariness of human nature.

One of the challenges referred to, however, was not accepted, and the manner of its refusal was thus : a certain Senator feeling himself insulted by a General in the Army, sent his second to the latter

to make arrangements for a duel. To him the high-spirited General made reply: "My sword is not for an assassin and a thief," whereupon the second, himself a Federal Deputy, at once challenged the General on his own account, and received the disconcerting reply: "Go away, and don't make a fool of yourself," and for a few days after this the General aforesaid might have been seen walking about the streets of Rio de Janeiro with a riding-whip in his hand, ready for an encounter with either of the affronted parties.

During the first few years of the Republic the pattern of the postage stamps was altered several times, and on three occasions I have lost the value of those I had in hand, as after a certain date they were no longer accepted. Just before the occasion of the last alteration made in the device I was about to leave my home in Porto Alegre, and went to the General Post Office, where I purchased some postage stamps, leaving some with my wife and taking the others with me. In less than a fortnight our letters to each other were charged double fee, as if they had been unstamped, although a stamp which had been purchased at the "Administração Geral dos Correios" (General Post Office) only a few days previously was affixed to each one, so that triple postage was really charged. Feeling very much annoyed about it, I gave vent to an expression of my opinion on the subject freely, at table d'hôte, discussing the matter with a friend who was staying at the same hotel, and qualified the proceeding by a word which implied that it was not honest, whereupon a young man at the end of the table, who had

only arrived that afternoon and was quite unknown to me, got up from his seat and exclaimed, addressing himself to me : " You are not of this country, and I will not permit it." So I rose from my chair too, and, looking across at him, replied : " It is said, and it was I who said it," this being a literal translation of a form of speech it is customary to employ out there by way of reiterating or maintaining an assertion which has been called in question. Although my pugnacious young interlocutor had nothing further to say to me in reply to this, some commotion was caused, and two gentlemen whom I knew very well remonstrated, one of them especially remarking that he entirely agreed with me, repeating the very words I had used.

I have related this trifling incident, not as being characteristic of Brazilian manners in the least, but as an example of what you may encounter sometimes in young republicans who are more enthusiastic in their patriotic ideas than discreet in their bearing. I well remember reading in a daily paper, in the very youthful days of the Republic, an announcement made by an over-jubilant individual to the effect that he intended to adopt the name of " Republicano " (Republican) as his Christian name, and would thenceforth sign himself " Republicano ———." Whether he still retains his adopted name I really do not know, I should imagine not, for it is remarkable how often excessive ardour decreases, even to the vanishing point.

Brazilians themselves have an untranslatable word for this sort of thing which describes it perfectly, " Desfructe," with its adjective " Desfructa-

vel." To say that *desfructe* means idle dalliance and that *desfructavel* means a person given to dallying or trifling is to give a very feeble idea of the sting that the original word leaves behind it. I will therefore content myself with remarking that when the Republic first came into being there was a certain amount of *desfructe* in some quarters.

But a much more serious thing was the way in which public money began to disappear from various governmental departments. In the days of the Empire the would-be Republicans used to make particular mention of the extreme costliness of the court, as a good reason for abolishing it. Dom Pedro II received from the National Treasury the sum of eight hundred contos, being in English money equivalent to eighty thousand pounds per annum. I remember one of the leading papers publishing a statement, in the year 1904, to the effect that during the space of three months only defalcations had taken place in various departments in different States amounting to over thirteen thousand contos, which, allowing for the difference in the value of the paper currency at that time, was more than eight times the amount paid by the Exchequer to Dom Pedro in a whole year.

I may remark also that those upon whom responsibility for such a deficit might rest, or to whom suspicion might naturally attach, are rarely, if ever, called to account before any public tribunal. In a general way the most one may read in the papers, in reference to such persons—apart from the comments and criticisms, which are sometimes very outspoken—is that So-and-so has sent in his

resignation. And that is all I have ever known befall any one compromised in such matters. I am happy to be able to state that this condition does not exist in the State Rio Grande do Sul, although it is quite common in most of the other States.

There is a popular saying in the country :—

Quem rouba muito é, barão,
Quem rouba pouco é ladrão.

(He who steals much is a baron,
He who steals little is a thief.)

So perhaps “he who takes what isn’t his’n” feels safer if he does it on a large scale.

Another great scandal of Republican importation is the non-attendance on the part of the Senators and Deputies at the Public Assembly. One may often read telegrams in the daily papers, referring to the previous day, stating that “Não houve sessão por falta de numero,” which in English is : “There was no session for want of a sufficient number of members.”

In the time of the monarchy the elected Deputies and the Senators appointed by the Emperor were all unpaid, and the Assembly used to open in Rio de Janeiro on the 3rd May, and, as a rule, would sit until the end of September, or the middle of October at the latest, during which time the business for the year would be transacted. Now they are all paid at the rate of seventy milréis, or about £4 10s., per diem—I think they have recently voted themselves an increase—and the plain

truth is that during the first few months hardly any real business is gone into, the representatives of the nation amusing themselves in any way that may please them by way of passing the time, instead of attending to their duties. Some even go the length of touring in Europe during the time Congress is sitting—of course, receiving pay all the time. Any one can verify this fact by simply reading the Brazilian dailies, as they frequently call attention to the scandal, but it continues notwithstanding. The natural consequence of all this is that, instead of the work of the Congress being concluded by September or October, as it always used to be in former times—that is to say, in the days of the Empire, when the members were unpaid—they now prolong their sessions until the end of the year and frequently until the beginning of the next, when business is hurried through and voted for without much consideration, if any. I remember one year the necessary provision for paying interest on a loan was forgotten in the Budget, and confessedly so, by the then Minister of Finance. I believe, speaking from memory, that this occurred in 1899, but of the fact I am positive, as I read it in the papers at the time.

Even in the days of the Empire it was quite a common thing to have a much more numerous staff in the various governmental departments than was necessary for the work that had to be done, but this, instead of being reformed, has been increased and exaggerated by the Republicans. It is no unusual thing to find, beyond the number actually required for the performance of certain duties, as

many as double that number whose duties appear to consist in nothing more arduous than smoking cigarettes and conversing with one another. A friend of mine who was himself engaged in a public office made particular mention of this to me one day in course of conversation. I was well aware of the fact before he mentioned it, however, for it is sometimes commented on by the press.

In corroboration of my statement I will give an extract from the *Folhinha Laemmert*, an annual publication issued by a well-known publishing house of French origin in Rio de Janeiro. In their *Folhinha* (Directory) for 1911-12 may be read as follows :—

Alagoas, population 700,000. Maceió (the capital), pop. 45,000.

1 Governor, 1 Vice-Governor, 3 Federal Senators, 6 Federal Deputies, 15 State Senators, 30 State Deputies and so on.

Amazonas, population 379,000. Manáos (the capital), pop. 60,000.

Federal Treasury, 30 employees. General Post Office, 83 employees.

Intendencia (Town Hall): 1 *Superintendente*, 8 *Intendentes*.

Section (Department) of the *Superintendencia*, 44 employees.

As for the Custom House officials, their name is legion. And this leads me to speak of another source of annoyance and dissatisfaction to the commercial section of the public, at least. This is the indiscriminate way in which goods are classified at the various Custom Houses, according to the

decision of whomsoever may have authority to settle such matters.

To give an example : an English firm some time ago sent out a consignment of paper to a house in Rio Grande described as "assetinado" (satin-finished), which was precisely similar in every respect to some which had been previously sent to Rio de Janeiro and there charged at one hundred réis per kilogramme on entering. In Rio Grande this paper was classified as "Papel de encadernação," which in English means literally paper for book-binding purposes, and was declared liable to a duty at the rate of five hundred réis per kilogramme, of which 35 per cent. in gold and 65 per cent. in paper money. The consignee protested, and made an application to the Minister of the "Fazenda" (Administration) in February, 1912, and in December of the same year the paper was sold in public auction, by order of the inspector, as nothing had been done about it.

Another example of the autocratic way in which some matters are ruled in the Custom House is that Pears' Soap, the unscented variety, which is commonly sold here in England at $3\frac{1}{2}d.$ per tablet, and each cake of which comes out in a wrapper marked "Unscented," is declared in the Custom House in Rio Grande (and probably in other States too) to be scented, and charged the higher rate of duty, which is, of course, the motive for this classification.

Albeit the irregularities and abuses to the enumeration of which I have devoted the present chapter, and which no one who has followed the political history of Brazil since the proclamation of the

Republic can gainsay, I am not so prejudiced as to wish to tar all Brazilian Republicans with the same brush, and although I do not profess any sympathy with the new form of government, yet I freely admit that some of the new men who have come forward, notably within the last few years, have shown great disinterestedness and singleness of purpose in their public capacity. That the number of such may increase is my sincerest wish.

CHAPTER XIII

The climate of Brazil—Various conditions to consider—Much of the interior at a great elevation—Consequently cooler—Greater heat along the coast—Amazon valley subject to annual floods—Places further removed from the Equator where the heat is quite as great—Heat less oppressive there—Heat felt more here—Ill effects attributed to climate sometimes arise from imprudence—Southern States of Brazil most suited to Europeans, being in the Temperate Zone—The coast of Paraná—Difficult for navigation—Good ports—Great bay of Paranaguá—Curityba, the capital—Considerable elevation—Railway from the coast—Important piece of engineering—Oysters—Great trade in bananas—Herva mate—Known here as Paraguay tea—Method of preparing for the market—Way of making the beverage and manner of taking it—Excellent known qualities of the herb—Great quantities exported to the River Plate—Indians in Paraguay—They procure the Herva—They are greatly imposed upon—Climate of Santa Catharina very agreeable—Cost of living less there than anywhere else in Brazil—Fine view of mainland seen from the island of Desterro—Flourishing Colonies in this State—Settlement of territorial dispute between the States of Paraná and Santa Catharina.

I HAVE often been asked about the climate of Brazil. To answer such a question completely is beyond the scope of this work, for in a country so vast and amidst conditions so varied, it is not a climate, but climates, one has to consider. In this, as in many other respects, Brazil is favoured by Nature: being in the southern hemisphere, where the expanse of ocean is much greater than in the northern, the air is moist and consequently cooler.

The greater part of the interior is high land, and subject to no extremes of heat—of this I have had personal experience, having spent a whole summer in Barbacena, in Minas Geraes, which is at an elevation of 3,672 feet above the level of the sea, and I found the temperature quite pleasant.

Remembering that the extreme points of the country from north to south extend over 39 degrees, with as many from east to west, at its greatest breadth, with the greater part of the interior, as already stated, at a fair elevation, any European may select the part best suited to his requirements, seeing that he has an extensive choice.

In the part of the Amazon valley subject to annual floods there are, of course, regions not desirable for the general habitation of man, but these apart, there are few disadvantages on account of climate—quite the contrary.

Along the coast, or near it—the most populated part—in the height of summer the thermometer may frequently register 96° or 98° Fahrenheit, or even 100° sometimes. I remember a summer, in 1902, when for four or five consecutive days the temperature rose to 105–6° Fahrenheit in the shade, that is to say, during the day, the early mornings and evenings were much cooler. There are, however, many places in the world—far removed from the Tropics—where high temperatures are recorded: New York, for instance, where cases of sunstroke are not uncommon occurrences in the summer.

While referring to high temperatures, I would like to remark that I have found the heat less op-

pressive in Brazil than here in England. With the thermometer at 80° here one feels the effect of the heat quite as much or more than at 90° there. This is no idea peculiar to myself, for I have met other people who quite agree with me on this subject. I will not attempt any explanation of the reason, but merely record the fact.

After many years' residence in the country and from personal observation, the conclusion is almost forced upon me that some people are prone to attribute to climatic influences what is perhaps the result of their own imprudence. I have known such cases. During the forty years I have lived in the country I cannot count altogether fourteen days of indisposition, and, as I have been in various parts, far removed one from the other, I might almost be considered a living refutation of the ill effect of the climate to be found there.

In very truth no one fairly healthy and with common sense to guide them in their daily routine of life need have any fear of settling in Brazil. The climate in much of its extensive territory is, to my thinking, far preferable to that of some parts of Europe. It is enjoyable to need no recourse to artificial means of keeping one's self warm, but simply to dress with the lightest of clothing.

On the whole, however, the southernmost States of Brazil, namely, Paraná, Santa Catharina and Rio Grande do Sul, are the ones which offer the most suitable conditions of life to the average European. They are situate in the Temperate Zone, the first-named of the three just overlapping the Tropic of Capricorn; the climate is therefore





LONDON AND BRAZILIAN BANK IN CURITYBA.

peculiarly suited to Europeans, notwithstanding that the heat in summer is greater than here, for this only lasts a short time as compared with the North of Brazil, which stretches well over the Equator.¹

Although the coast-line is exceedingly dangerous and difficult of navigation, Paraná has some good ports, the chief of which are Paranaguá and Antonina. The former is the best deep-water harbour between Santos and Montevideo, its bay is one of the largest in Brazil, and is also, I believe, one of the most dangerous for navigation. The execution of the schemes which have been elaborated from time to time for improvements to this port would make it one of the finest on the coast.

Paranaguá is connected with Curityba, the capital, by means of a railway which climbs up the mountain on which this town stands at an elevation of very nearly 3,000 feet above the level of the sea. This railway is a very fine piece of engineering, and does great credit to the Brazilian engineers who constructed it. Indeed, this and the Corcovado and Cubatão railways are three of the most remarkable examples of the engineer's art in South America.

The port of Antonina is connected with the capital by means of a very good road.

In Paranaguá oysters which connoisseurs say are of excellent quality are to be found in great quantities.

The trade in bananas, both in Paraná and in the neighbouring State of Santa Catharina, is considerable. Boats laden with this wholesome and very

¹ The extremes of latitude range from 5° N. to 34° S.

nutritious fruit swarm round the vessels, which call at any of the ports in either of these States.

Paraná, which has the Paraguayan frontier for its western boundary, is the great centre for the culture of Herva Mate¹ (pronounced Errva mahte), known in England by the name of Paraguay tea. Great quantities of this herb are exported to the Argentine Republic and to Montevideo. It is prepared by first drying and then roasting, after which it is coarsely pounded, both leaves and stalks being subjected to this process together. The beverage is made from it in the following manner : a portion of the Herva is placed in a kind of small gourd, called a "Cuya," then a very little cold water is poured on to it;² next, the "Bomba" is introduced. This is a silver tube about eight inches long, flattened at one end for the mouthpiece, and having a sort of bulb at the other extremity perforated by small holes. Then the gourd, or cuya, is filled with water just on the boil, and the liquid is sucked up through the tube, or bomba.

Inveterate mate drinkers prefer to take it without sugar, when it is called "Chimarrão." It is almost impossible to give the pronunciation of this word in English syllables : the *ch* has the sound of *sh* in English, and the *til* over a vowel gives it a nasal sound as of *ng*, not merely *n*, as in Spanish, consequently the pronunciation is something like Shimarraong.

This Herva Mate, according to the experience

¹ *Ilex Paraguayensis*.

² I believe opinions differ as to whether cold water should be poured on first, but I have heard it advocated.

of those who take it, and to judge by various analyses that have been made of its composition, has much to recommend it, exception being made of the common mode of taking it, which is to pass the Cuya, already described, round from one to another, with the same mouthpiece for one and all to use.

A concentrated infusion made with cold water, which the Paraguayans call "Tereré," is considered to be especially beneficial and agreeable in hot weather. It is likewise believed to be a good substitute for vegetable food, whilst another virtue attributed to it is that it relieves one of a sensation of hunger during a comparative fast.

The foregoing remarks on the subject of this valuable herb, so little known in England, are not based on my own experience, but on that of others who have made it their particular study.

Whilst on the subject of Herva Mate it would not, I think, be irrelevant to narrate what I remember to have read in respect of the Indians of Paraguay, when contracts are made with them to go and seek this herb in the regions where it grows wild, for which purpose they have to travel many leagues, encountering many difficulties by the way. The following is a translation of an extract from an article dealing with the subject :—

"The business having been arranged with some of the tribes, they come, with their 'Caciques' (Chiefs) and wives and children into the nearest town, and receive a first instalment of their pay, which is immediately spent in drink, and in gambling and dancing, all of which they may have been

some time without enjoying. It might naturally be thought that this was a very bad beginning for the fulfilment of the contract, but the contrary is the case. It is true the part payment handed to them in advance disappears in all this merriment and festivity, but the Indian has a delicate conscience which compels him to religiously fulfil any contract which he considers to be his duty, however arduous it may be. The abuses and impositions to which these poor people have been exposed would be difficult to believe, were they not authenticated by persons whose testimony is beyond dispute."

The foregoing leads one to conclude that, if the Indian is more corrupt in the present day, the corruption has, perhaps, been learned from the "Civilizing" race.

However, to return to Brazil: journeying down the coast from Paraná, we next come to the State of Santa Catharina, which is, so to speak, wedged in between the two other States of Paraná and Rio Grande do Sul, for the last-mentioned States unite westwards, though not on the coast-line.¹

The climate of Santa Catharina is particularly healthy and agreeable; and living is said to be cheaper there than in any other part of Brazil. The capital of this State, now called Florianopolis,

¹ Since writing the above I see, by the newspapers, that the two States of Paraná and Santa Catharina have come to an agreement, after a lengthy and tedious dispute, by which the south-western part of Paraná is now conceded to Santa Catharina. Consequently this latter State now stretches right across to the Argentine frontier, and Paraná and Rio Grande do Sul no longer join hands behind Santa Catharina, as they formerly did.

is very pleasantly situated on the island of Des-terro, and has an excellent port. The city is on the western side, facing the mainland, which latter presents a fine and picturesque panorama to the beholder.

In this last-named State are two very flourishing and prosperous Colonies, both of German origin, named respectively Joinville and Blumenau. Neither must I omit to mention the Italian Colonies of Nova Trento, to which reference will be made further on.¹

¹ See Chapter XIV, page 157.

CHAPTER XIV

Rio Grande do Sul—The Bar a great obstacle to navigation—Vessels have to wait days to enter the port sometimes—High freights in consequence—Difficulty caused by the sand—work being carried out at present to overcome this—Another scheme to deal with the difficulty—By opening up a port further north—Distance from Rio Grande to Porto Alegre—Remarkable change in the coast-line—The Serra do Mar not really a range of mountains—High tableland—Looks like a mountain ridge as seen from the sea—Sand dunes further south—The old town of São José buried in the sand—Fish abundant in Rio Grande—Witticism of young Brazilian lady concerning Rio Grande—Lagoa dos Patos—Quantities of wild duck—A pastoral land—Very fertile soil—Black ant a great pest—A flight of locusts surpasses all imagination—Fortunately they only appear very rarely—Some bees indigenous to Brazil—Wax exported to Germany—A large apiary in Rio Pardo—The silkworm and the mulberry-tree—A fine native variety of the silkworm—Silk goods made in the Colony of Caxias—Also by a Sisterhood of Brazilian Nuns—European flowers and fruit grown in the State—Also vegetables—Orchids common—Not held in favour because they are considered to be unlucky—The State of Rio Grande do Sul has only a little more than a million people—In extent it is nearly half the size of France—German Colonists have prospered there—Buried treasure—Italian Colonies engage in wine-making—Also other industries—Great distance some Colonists have to travel to dispose of their produce—Government assistance to Colonists—Valuable Mandioca root—Method of preparing it taught by the Indians to the Portuguese—This root attains to an enormous size—Tapioca also prepared from it—The rivers in this State—They might be made navigable by a system of locks.

RIO GRANDE DO SUL, the southernmost State of Brazil, is entered from the Atlantic by the Bar of Rio Grande, which Bar is a great





VALLEY DAS ANTAS, RIO GRANDE DO SUL.

From "Brazil in 1912."



IVAHY COLONY, PARANA.

From "Brazil in 1912."

obstacle to navigation, and freights are consequently much higher from Europe to this port than to Montevideo, which, of course, is more distant, the reason for the higher freight being that vessels have to wait a considerable time—days sometimes—before they are able to pass either in or out of this Bar. The difficulty is caused by the volume of sand constantly brought down from the lake on the one side and silted up by the action of the tide on the other. At present there is a company engaged upon the work of getting rid of this obstruction, which is a serious one for the commerce of this State, and if this work is successfully carried out it will contribute greatly to the future prosperity of Rio Grande.

From time to time a scheme has been suggested to open a port further north on the Atlantic coast, which would greatly facilitate communication between the capital of the State, Porto Alegre, and the capital of the country, Rio de Janeiro, for, under present conditions, a boat leaving Rio for Porto Alegre has to go down to Rio Grande, cross the Bar, and then go up again across a huge lake, the Lagôa dos Patos, to reach its destination. The distance from Porto Alegre to Rio Grande the port is two degrees, which, coming from the north southwards, has to be traversed twice, once on the Atlantic side, and once inside the kind of tongue of land which stretches down all along the coast of this State, only broken once by the Bar of Rio Grande.

It is proposed to link up, by means of canals, some of the smaller lakes which lie dotted about this strip

of land, and also to form a canal to the coast at a place called Porto das Torres, on the Atlantic coast. This plan does not, I believe, offer any great engineering difficulties, but it is not looked upon with favour by the town of Rio Grande, as it would mean a death-blow to it. I suppose, however, this scheme will now be finally abandoned, as the work of disobstructing the Bar—a matter which has engaged the attention of engineers, both national and foreign, for more than thirty years—has now been formally undertaken, although it will, naturally, take some years to carry out.¹

The change in the scenery of the coast-line coming down from Rio de Janeiro to Rio Grande is most remarkable: the magnificent verdure-clad Serra do Mar gradually disappears, and only a long white line of sand is seen instead. Indeed, the coast now becomes one long sandbank.

I should explain here that the Serra do Mar (Sea Range), although it looks like a range of mountains or hills, as seen from the deck of a vessel out at sea, is really the tableland which stands very high above the sea.

As one reaches Rio Grande, however, the mountainous coast merges, as I have just stated, into sand dunes, and so powerful is the action of the sand in this region that the old town of São José de Norte, which used to lie opposite the present town of Rio Grande, has quite disappeared from sight. For some years the church towers alone

¹ Since writing the above it has come to my knowledge that there is a fresh scheme afloat for opening out the Porto das Torres.

were to be seen, showing above the sand, but now they too have gone.

Sand may be said to be the dominant characteristic of Rio Grande, whilst, being a seaport, fish is abundant there, and, as a witty young Brazilian lady remarked: "The violets in Rio Grande smell of fish and the fish tastes of sand!"

As you go up the Lake towards Porto Alegre, however, the scenery again becomes verdant and pleasant to the eye. The *Lagôa dos Patos*, as this lake is called, derives its name from the great quantity of wild duck to be found there, "*Pato*" being the Portuguese for duck.

The land is pre-eminently pastoral, and—in this particular region—it is agricultural too. Vegetation is more than rich, Nature is kindly, and—if we make exception of the black ant—there are but few adverse circumstances to contend with in this connexion. The ant is undeniably a very serious pest, and, in some districts, an almost chronic one: the depredations of this destructive little insect have to be seen to be realized. It is not over-stating the case to say that a swarm of black ants will strip a garden utterly bare of flower and foliage in an incredibly short space of time—in fact, in our own garden it has happened more than once that we have woken up in the morning to find every rose-bush stripped clean and every violet-plant eaten away to the very root, and this in spite of every care and precaution.

Nor must I forget to mention another enemy, even more destructive than the ant, although his visitations are fortunately rare, whilst the ant is, so

to speak, an institution in this State. I refer now to the locust, or, as it is called there, "Gafanhoto." The State of Rio Grande is sometimes visited by these locusts, which come in immense swarms and cause much damage to the plantations. To witness the ravages caused by them is to realize in some measure what the "Plague of Locusts" in Egypt must have been. They will leave the ground entirely bare wheresoever they alight, and I have seen orange-trees entirely denuded of all their leaves in a few hours, and, incredible though it may seem, they have even succeeded in retarding a railway train. I do not mean, of course, to say that they come in a body and stop the train, but they fall on the rails in such countless numbers, and render the latter so slippery, that the driving wheels of the engine spin round without getting a proper purchase on the rails. But, an adequate idea of the vast numbers of these creatures that come together in a flight can only be formed by actually seeing them, for it surpasses all imagination. On one occasion I was driving across country, when I came under a flight passing straight across my path, overhead, from right to left, stretching as far as the eye could see in either direction, and it took me half an hour to get beyond them, going at a fair trot, and when I looked back there was still no sign of an end of them at either horizon, whether to the right or to the left. They positively darkened an otherwise clear sky, so densely packed was the swarm.

: It is said of these locusts that each swarm has one locust that acts as the leader, just as every

swarm of bees has its queen, and they all follow whithersoever it leads them. If the leader can be destroyed, then the whole swarm perishes at once for want of a guide. The great difficulty, however, is to get at the leader, for, like the queen-bee, it is guarded and protected by the others. One method of attacking the swarms is to fire rockets into the air. This brings down great numbers of them, and if the leader chances to be hit there is an end of the whole band, but if not, they go on as ruthlessly as ever.

It is likewise said that they breed in the Andes, but I am not able to vouch for the accuracy of either of these last two statements.

After describing the havoc caused by the two most destructive insects I know of, viz., the ant and the locust, it is pleasant to be able to turn to the constructive ones, namely, the bee and the silk-worm.

Bees of many different kinds are known in Brazil, and wild honey is often found in the forests, the bees building their combs in the hollows of trees, or in holes and crevices in the rocks, or, indeed, in any convenient sheltered nook or cranny. The quality of honey so found varies considerably, as it depends, naturally, upon the neighbouring vegetation.

Amongst the indigenous bees of Brazil some are stingless, and one of this species, a very small one, produces honey of a very agreeable flavour, though only in very small quantities. I do not think the author of the most delightful book¹ on bees known

¹ *La Vie des Abeilles*. Maeterlinck.

has ever studied Brazilian bees. Should he ever turn his attention in this quarter he will find much to interest him, I feel sure. There is another kind of bee there, too, that builds very large hives of clay.

Apiculture is not gone into very extensively as yet, although in some of the States attention is being given to it, more particularly in Rio Grande do Sul. In most of the Colonies established in this State there are apiaries, and wax is exported, but on a small scale. Nearly all of it, I believe, goes to Germany. I know, at least, of a German house in Porte Alegre, the capital of the State, which will buy all the wax that is to be obtained.

Besides the apiaries kept by the Colonists there are others, two of which on a much larger scale than in the Colonies. One of these I have visited, in the Municipality of Rio Pardo,¹ a few hours' journey by rail from Porto Alegre. It contained more than a thousand hives. Within the last few years the production of honey and wax has augmented considerably, so I think it may safely be classified as one of the coming industries.

The silkworm and the mulberry-tree were introduced into Brazil by the Portuguese. The tree has thriven well in the country, and is to be found in several of the States, but little has been done hitherto in the culture of the worm, and it is only, comparatively, quite recently that any serious attention has been given to it, and a fine field may well be opened up in the production of native silk, as most exorbi-

¹ Rio Pardo was formerly the capital of the State (or Province) of Rio Grande do Sul.

tant duties are charged in the Custom House on all silk goods.

Besides the imported variety there are native silkworms in Brazil, of which the most important feeds upon a plant known there as the "Mamono" (*Ricinus communis*), which grows wild everywhere. The butterfly of this species is both large and beautiful, and the worm is considered to be of a hardier nature than the common silkworm.

In the State of Rio Grande do Sul the mulberry-tree is plentiful, and in the Colony of Caxias some of the Italian Colonists there are engaged in both the culture of the silkworm and in the working up of its produce. They make some very handsome shawls and scarves, of which I have purchased some fine specimens, also handkerchiefs and other small articles.

Of course this industry is very much in its infancy as yet, but in some of the localities the thread produced is remarkable for its elasticity and lustre.

Quite recently the Government has decided to give rewards and prizes with a view to encouraging this useful industry, which certainly has a fair prospect before it in the future.

In the neighbouring State of Santa Catharina it is also being developed. Some of the Italians in the Colony of Nova Trento (New Trent) are now cultivating the silkworm, and the factories kept by the Sisterhood of Brazilian Nuns of the Order of the "Immaculate Conception" take all the produce. The work in these two places is done entirely by the Nuns, and they manufacture scarves, hosiery and other articles of a similar kind, all of which

are made of the pure silk, and they are consequently much superior to some of the silk goods to be bought in Europe, where silk is made heavier by chemical preparations of lead, as it is always sold by weight.

Almost every kind of European flower, fruit and vegetable will grow in this region, not to mention other varieties as yet unknown to the European market. Indian corn grows plentifully and requires very little care, if any, beyond the initial trouble of sowing it. Orchids can be obtained in the woods almost as easily as primroses or daisies can be picked in the fields in England. They are not very popular, however, as there is a common superstition that they are unlucky.

The territory of Rio Grande do Sul is only a little less than half that of France, whilst its inhabitants only number slightly over a million. It is therefore hardly necessary to say that great expanses of land lie waiting to be developed. Like the rest of Brazil, it was originally colonized by the Portuguese, and their descendants still form the bulk of the population, but here (in the State of Rio Grande do Sul) the German element is very strong, and has become increasingly so of late years.

It is commonly asserted here in England that Germany cannot colonize, but those who believe this to be the case can have no idea of how the German Colonies in Brazil have developed and prospered. Almost every branch of industry and agriculture undertaken by this thrifty and hard-working people has borne fruit a hundredfold: from digging and planting potato-patches to running

large and enterprising importing-houses : from cobbling old boots to establishing match-factories.

This was literally the case with one German family out there, of whom report says that the founders were a couple of Colonists of quite humble origin, the man being a cobbler by trade, and that once, during a severe drought, he required some water to moisten a bit of shoe-leather to mend a pair of old boots, and, digging in his garden, or plot of ground, he came suddenly upon something hard which proved to be an earthenware jar full of gold and silver coins. The grandchildren of this old couple now occupy a prominent position, and possess a large match-factory in the very place where the treasure is said to have been found.

In this connexion I may mention that the finding of buried treasure is not an uncommon occurrence in this State, the explanation being that, during one of the revolutions,¹ which lasted from 1835 to 1845, many people buried their valuables for safety, and in some instances never returned to fetch them away again. Until recent times, too, it was quite customary for people to bury their money in the back garden, or to brick it up in one of the inner walls of the house, instead of depositing it in a bank.

¹ The great, Italian General Garibaldi, who went out to South America as a young man and spent some years in Brazil and the neighbouring republics of Uruguay and Argentina, took an active part in this revolution with Bento Gonçalves, one of the great historic figures of that day. He married a Brazilian girl named Annita, who fought by his side in another revolution in Santa Catharina in which he also took part, under the lead of David Canabarro.

Quite tempting little hoards have been found now and again in pulling down old houses.

The Italian element is likewise on the increase in this State, and there are some very prosperous Colonies peopled by Italians, which are devoted to the cultivation of grapes for making wine, and the culture of the silkworm, of which I have already spoken. They also make straw hats, baskets, wickerwork chairs and other articles of a kindred nature. On the whole, however, the artistic Italian may be said to be less utilitarian than the more pushful German, who has, moreover, the advantage of priority on the scene.

There are Colonies dotted about in various parts of this State, some of which are not at all favourably or advantageously situated, inasmuch as the Colonists have to drive their carts for long distances, and over bad roads, in order to reach a market for their produce, or indeed any place at all where they can sell it. I have known them go as far as forty leagues, and the Brazilian league is equivalent to nearly four of our English miles, being 6,000 metres long, which is an enormous distance to travel to sell agricultural produce. There is a regrettable lack of care and forethought shown in the ordering of certain things, of which this is but an instance by the way.

The Colony of São Leopoldo, near Porto Alegre, is German, and is the oldest in the State. As a matter of fact, it is no longer a Colony, but has been raised to the dignity of a city.

In São Leopoldo there are several coloured people who have grown up amongst the Germans and have

learned their language. The story goes that, on one occasion when a fresh batch of immigrants had arrived in Porto Alegre, and were waiting to be draughted off to their destination, a coloured man, who spoke German very well, was sent, purposely, as a joke, to talk to them, and, upon the new arrivals expressing surprise at his colour—taking him for a German—he told them this was the effect of the climate, and that they too would become the same colour if they stayed in the country long enough, whereupon some of them were so horrified that they immediately wanted to go back to Germany. Such is the abysmal ignorance of some of the European emigrants!

Of course, a German or Italian Colony in Brazil is not the same thing as an English Colony in an English possession. The Colonists go out under certain specified conditions, they have each a portion of ground apportioned to them, under contract with the Government, to work upon, and for which they pay so much a year to the aforesaid Government, and after a certain period, when the total amount agreed upon has been handed over to the Government, this piece of land becomes their property. When the whole extent of land apportioned out to the Colonists has thus been paid for, it is said to be enfranchised and becomes a city or town, or municipality, as the case may be.

Before leaving the subject of the Colonies, I may mention that amongst the most profitable articles produced, especially in the German Colonies, are potatoes, black beans, Indian corn, or “Milho,” as it is called there, and “Mandioca.” As this latter

product is hardly known at all here in England, it deserves special description.

The mandioca root (in French manioc) is undoubtedly indigenous to South America, for when Brazil was discovered by the Portuguese the Indians were found using it for food, and it was from them that the process of preparing it as an edible was learned. A very necessary process too, as there is one kind, namely, the bitter mandioca, which is decidedly poisonous until it is properly treated. The word itself is of Indian origin, belonging to the Tupí-Guaraní language, and the French form is evidently derived from it.

Two kinds of this root are known, the sweet mandioca, commonly called "Aipím" (pronounced I-ping), and the bitter, which is the kind most extensively cultivated, as it affords flour of better quality and yields it in a greater quantity than the sweet kind. This sweet kind, or aipím, can be eaten without any special preparation beforehand, being merely cooked, either boiled or baked according to taste. It is also used for making a kind of preserve, somewhat after the manner of preserved ginger.

Under cultivation these roots will sometimes attain to an enormous size. There are varieties of each kind, and one of the bitter sort, known by the name of "Mandioca-assú" (assú meaning big, great or large in the aboriginal tongue), has sometimes attained to the great weight of nearly 150 kilogrammes.

The flour prepared from this root, called "Farinha de mandioca," is an article of daily consumption

in almost every house, either in town or country, in the latter often taking the place of bread where this is not readily procurable. It is commonly used by shaking some over a plate containing meat and gravy. It is also used for thickening soup, and with excellent results, if properly done. Another very general way in which it is taken is in the form of "Pirão": this is made by simply pouring boiling water over it, stirring carefully all the time, when it makes a very good adjunct to a dish of roast beef. Still another mode of serving this useful article of food, is in the shape of "Farofa," which is done by just slightly moistening the flour and adding butter and finely shredded onion, after which it is placed in the oven. This is a favourite stuffing for turkeys. But it is most commonly eaten, it seems to me, cooked with black beans. Prepared in this way it may be described as the national dish of the south.

The culture of this valuable root and the process of afterwards converting it into flour, or meal, is quite an important industry, as may readily be surmised, seeing that it is in such universal demand. The mode of preparing it is as follows:—

The roots must first be washed and scraped, after which they are placed in perforated vessels and subjected to considerable pressure. The liquid which drains out during this process (when the bitter kind of root is treated) is of a decidedly poisonous nature, although the sweet root, or *aipím*, has nothing poisonous in it. After undergoing this treatment it is sifted and put on hot plates, in a kind of oven, and is thus reduced to a more or less fine powder,

which, if the process be thoroughly carried out, and the final cooking carefully attended to, is of excellent quality. Much depends, however, on the way in which it is treated. I may mention that this flour is never reduced to the fineness of wheaten flour—it looks not unlike white sawdust.

Genuine tapioca—tapioca, by the by, is also an Indian word—is likewise obtained from this root. The liquid which runs from the roots when they are pressed is collected and allowed to stand some little time, after which a deposit forms, and when the liquid is decanted a fine quality starch is obtained, which is subjected to repeated washings and carefully dried.

The method of treating this root to rid it of the poison contained in it is precisely the same in all respects as that in use by the aborigines of South America and taught by them to the Portuguese, although it may be somewhat modified in detail owing to the introduction of improved machinery.

Whilst describing the trouble caused to agriculturists in this State by ants and locusts, I omitted to mention another source of serious trouble, and that is the frequent occurrence of droughts. A drought in a hot climate is a very grave matter, but this evil has its own remedy close at hand, for Brazil is an exceptionally well-watered land. There are numerous and important rivers in this State, the presence of which should render irrigation a comparatively easy task for any organized body with capital at command.

First and foremost amongst these rivers are the Uruguay, the Camaquã and the Jacuhy, these

three being the longest and containing the greatest body of water : and besides these there are many others, such as the Ibicuhy, the Piratiním, and nearly a dozen more of quite a respectable size.

If these rivers were always navigable—and they might be made so by a system of locks, such as we have on the Thames—they would afford an excellent means of communication to many parts of the interior.

CHAPTER XV

The different States in Brazil all self-governing—Customs duties, Post and Telegraph revenue only contributed to the Central Government—The right of self-government likewise granted to the various Municipalities—Measures in violation of the Constitution have resulted in consequence—Inter-State duties—Varying taxes in the Municipalities of the same State—Disregard of the President's decision—Annoyance in travelling from the frontier—Repeated examination of luggage—A gentleman interrogated because he had nothing in one of his bags—Much vigilance to check contraband—Very difficult to stop this—There is a great incentive to carry it on—Information is brought to the authorities of some contraband which is going to be passed across the frontier—Preparations to capture it—Amusing dénouement—Existing facilities for smuggling—A house on the frontier with front door in one country and back door in the other—Experiences in travelling by “*Diligencia*”—Not very punctual in starting—Various accidents—Journey across the camp with my family—Our chief “*Peão*” had no hands—Very deft notwithstanding—We lose our way—Have to run in at a “*Rancho*” on the side of a hill—We are suspicious of the people—They prove most hospitable—Hospitality a common characteristic here—We meet a great drove of cattle on the road—Great number of cows—Milk is very scarce in the winter—Butter still more so—Much imported butter sold—Cattle generally uncared for—They suffer much in the winter time—Especially during rainy weather—Quantities of silver used in horse gear—A custom derived from the neighbouring Spanish Republics—An Englishman who had three hundred sovereigns on his horse trappings—A ride through a primeval forest—Striking contrast between the quiet places in a large town and these solitudes—“*The land of the far distance.*”

ALL the States of Brazil are now self-governing, that is to say, they have a kind of “*Home Rule,*” or, as they themselves call it, “*Autonomia,*”

and this particular State, i.e., Rio Grande do Sul, only contributes three taxes to the Central Government, viz., the duties on Imports, Posts and Telegraphs. The remaining branches of administration are strictly internal, i.e., State, or Municipal.

On the other hand, the Central, or Federal Government, although not intervening in matters of internal administration, is bound to come to the assistance of the State in the event of foreign invasion.

This "Autonomia" or right of self-government is granted by the Constitution of the Republic to all the States, and by them, in their turn, to the different Municipalities, and, however wise or just such a measure may appear at first sight, it has brought about some very anomalous conditions, inasmuch as some of the States persist in a course which is clearly a violation of the Constitution, and that is the levying of inter-State duties. In this connexion the following incident which arose between the two States of Pernambuco and Rio Grande do Sul will serve as an illustration :—

Pernambuco, which imports a great deal of produce from Rio Grande do Sul, such as "jerked" beef, black beans and so on, commenced taxing these commodities, whereupon Rio Grande retaliated by taxing alcohol, sugar, etc., entering the State from Pernambuco. This led to an argument between the two States, and finally the matter was carried before the "Supremo Tribunal" (the High Court of Justice in Brazil), which decided that such taxes were unconstitutional. Nevertheless they continue to be levied in some of the States. A former President, Dr. Rodrigues Alves, tried, in the early part of his

term of office, to stop this abuse of power, but failed to achieve his purpose, as the opposition was too strong.

The various Municipalities in the different States also continue to make certain regulations and to levy taxes as they see fit, the consequence being that, in going from one Municipality to another one does not always know exactly what one may be exposed to, in the way of having to pay taxes, as the latter vary considerably in relation to the same article, profession, or business, in different districts.

I know personally of a case that exactly illustrates my point : some time ago the various Municipalities levied a tax which was excessive in all of them, but even more so in some than in others, and this naturally gave rise to a great deal of annoyance and vexation. Indeed, so vexatious was this found to be that a deputation waited upon the President¹ of the State to lay the matter before him, and he declared the tax to be illegal, or unconstitutional ; but on a friend of mine showing this declaration in a certain Municipality where they still desired to recover the tax, he was told : " The President has nothing to do with us ! "

In travelling from the southern or western frontiers, i.e., those bordering on the Argentine and Uruguay Republics, one is subjected to much annoyance in the way of having to open bags, boxes, portmanteaux, etc., repeatedly, even until one

¹ Some of the States are ruled by a President, some by a Governor, and the term of office varies slightly too. The State of Rio Grande do Sul is ruled by a President and his term of office is five years.

arrives at the centre of the State. To have to show the same things three times over is quite a common occurrence.

Some few years ago a man, whom I knew very well, was returning from the neighbouring Republic of Uruguay, and had, as usual, to open his bags and trunks and so on, and on its being observed that one of them was empty, he was asked in a suspicious manner why it was empty, to which he replied : " Because I put nothing in it ! "

All this demonstration of vigilance is supposed to be for the purpose of preventing contraband, which I do not think they will ever succeed in suppressing as long as they themselves continue to offer so much inducement for carrying it on. I mean, by creating such heavy Customs duties. And really, if private individuals can purchase the goods they require across the frontier and smuggle them safely into their own homes, one cannot help sympathizing with them. I am not, of course, defending the practice when it is carried on, by merchants, on a large scale, as these gentlemen obtain prices for their goods which should amply reimburse them for the highest duties. But in the case of private people one cannot feel that it is deserving of very severe censure, when one considers what numerous and crushing taxes they are subjected to, mainly of Republican origin—those dating from the time of the Empire having been increased and many fresh ones invented. This process of levying new taxes appears to be continuous, and is had resort to as a means of replenishing the public coffers, simply because such vast sums of money are squan-

dered, and I take this opportunity of remarking here that it is not the country generally that benefits by this system of increased taxation.

In connexion with the subject of contraband goods, an amusing incident occurred a short time before I left Brazil. The fiscal authorities engaged in the suppression of this illicit traffic on the banks of the Quarahy, a river which forms part of the southern frontier line and falls into the Uruguay, which is, there, the extreme western boundary of Rio Grande do Sul, received information of a scheme that was afloat to bring over a considerable quantity of contraband goods, whereupon they at once became very vigilant, active and secretive in their plans to capture it. This, of course, was merchandise, not merely a parcel of private purchases. Having chosen a coign of vantage they arranged to lie in ambush to await the passing of the bullock-carts, which would have to ford the river forming the dividing line between the two countries. They had not long to wait, their patience was soon rewarded by intelligence being brought to them of six carts, each drawn by four yoke of oxen, and laden with goods which were expected to cross on a certain night. They accordingly took up their position, and, early one morning, witnessed the passage of the six bullock-carts in question. As soon as they were on Brazilian territory they surprised the drivers and captured the carts, which latter are always covered in. On opening them, however, it was found that the carts were entirely empty, and their respective drivers' papers were all perfectly in order. They had come over to

fetch some goods. The contraband was passed at another point only known to those concerned in it!

The ways of smugglers are many and devious. In Jaguarão, a small town in the extreme south of Brazil, divided by a river of the same name from Artigas in the Republic of Uruguay, it was remarkable that people who crossed by the ferry-boat in the morning generally came home in the evening looking much stouter than when they had set out. Sant'Anna do Livramento, another small frontier town, is only divided from its opposite neighbour, Ribero (also in Uruguay), by a street. The facilities for smuggling here will be readily estimated, especially when I mention that in these places the shops keep open until quite late, and the streets are not remarkable for brilliance of illumination at night.

I knew an enterprising Portuguese merchant, who now rejoices in a title of nobility, who possessed a "Fazenda," or "Estancia," as it is more commonly called in the south, on the frontier, part of his property being in Brazil and part on the other side. The house, so I have heard, for I never saw it, was built in such a way that the front door was in one country and the back door in the other. And it was whispered quite audibly that great quantities of goods which came in at the front door from Europe, viâ Montevideo, passed out at the back door, after dark, to be carried to his retail house, there to be sold at the same prices as if he had paid the regular duties on them.

* * * * *

My experiences in travelling have been very varied, and would not excite envy in the breasts of the

luxury-loving tourists of Europe. I well remember the first time I went to book my seat in a "Diligencia" (Diligence), in order to travel into the interior. I was told that the conveyance in question would start at one o'clock in the morning, and upon my expressing a little surprise at the earliness of the hour, I was immediately told: "Well, two," upon which I remarked that there was no need to say one o'clock if two was the hour of departure, as, if they would name the correct hour I would be there, whereupon I was again told two o'clock in the morning. Accordingly, a little before two o'clock on the morning of the day appointed for the journey, I arrived at the place whence the diligence was to start, and found it all shut up. I knocked loudly several times, but it still remained closed, and I had to wait there in the street until a quarter past five, when the door opened, and the diligence lumbered up at the same time. We finally started at thirty-five minutes past five, and no word of apology or excuse was offered, although I very naturally complained.

On two occasions, when travelling by diligence, I was capsized, the vehicle turning completely over on its side, one of the occasions being at night, when it was pitch dark. Strange to say, I did not get even a scratch or bruise. On two other occasions the front wheels came off, and another time, when we were going down a hill at the foot of which ran a small river, or brook, the pole in front broke, which might have had disastrous consequences, but happily did not.

Another time I was travelling with my whole family by "Carretinha," a kind of wagonnette,

with three "Peões" (like the Spanish peon) and a small cavalcade consisting of twenty horses. Of course there was a driver to the *carretinha*, but I forget now whether he was one of the three men, or whether he made a fourth. The head *peão* was a negro, and he had no hands, but hooks instead: nevertheless he managed to saddle his horse very deftly. On this occasion we were travelling across the camp,¹ a journey which took us four days, and on the second day out we lost our way, and were obliged to turn in at sundown and ask hospitality at a very small "Rancho" on the side of a hill. The people here seemed so uncouth and different from those we had hitherto been accustomed to, that we felt very suspicious of them. However, they gave us accommodation for the night, and next morning brought us fresh milk and what provisions they had, and upon my asking for the bill they were quite hurt, and said they were so pleased to see us and to offer us what hospitality they could.

This is quite a common characteristic in the camp; but up to that time I had had no experience of the hospitable and kindly nature of the people in the country. Since then I have many times had occasion to notice that, under a rough exterior, they often possess warm and generous dispositions.

On this same journey we passed several droves of cattle, one of which, a very large one, consisting of over a thousand head. This is not an uncommon event when travelling in the camp, and one not un-

¹ This word is used to designate the open country which in Portuguese is "*campo*" and all English people there universally adopt the word camp as a convenient translation.

attended with danger. We had to draw aside and remain perfectly quiet while the herd passed, in order not to startle any of the animals and cause them to stampede, which might have involved us in some peril.

The most important feature in Rio Grande do Sul is the rearing of cattle, and, to say that there are many more cows than people is to give an idea that might still underestimate their number, and notwithstanding this, in the winter time it is difficult to get milk in the camp towns, and almost impossible to get butter or cheese. Foreign butter is to be seen in all the shops dealing in such produce, although the duty on it is exceedingly high. This high duty is ostensibly levied to protect a national industry which, in this State, is practically non-existent, during the winter months at all events. Fresh butter, I need hardly say, becomes quite an expensive article, not to say luxury, in the winter time.

The cattle are, as a rule, uncared for and quite unprotected, there being no shelter for them beyond that which Nature provides in the shape of a hedge or a clump of trees or something of that sort, which, generally speaking, is totally inadequate; the consequence being that in the winter, should the weather prove severe, with three or four consecutive days of rain and cold, they die in great numbers, from hunger and exposure. The poor creatures just stand about in helpless misery, as they will not lie down on the wet ground.

I recollect in the month of July, 1904, there was some very bad weather, and on one estate alone nearly a thousand head of cattle died in a few days.

The breeding of cattle being such an important industry a special chapter will be devoted to this subject.¹

In this State, which has for its immediate neighbours the Argentine and Uruguay Republics, both of Spanish origin, some customs characteristic of these two countries have crept in and become quite usual, offering to the observer a marked difference, as compared with the northern States. One such feature is very noticeable in the handsome trappings used with saddle-horses.

Of course, riding on horseback is the common means of locomotion in the country, and it is quite the rule to see the horse-gear and trappings heavily ornamented with silver. A handsome outfit of this kind may easily cost as much as a hundred pounds, for the headstall is embellished with chased silver put on in pieces, the bridle too will have a number of little spherical and flat tubular pieces all strung on, bead-fashion, whilst across the chest is placed a broad band covered with chased silver which reaches on either side as far as, and is fastened to, the saddle. The saddle, which is very different from the English article, is likewise adorned with silver chased, both in front and behind. The stirrups are entirely of silver, the part the rider's foot rests on is from two-and a half to three inches in depth, somewhat resembling a silver cup. The riding-whip, called "Rebenque,"² is also richly decorated in a corresponding manner.

¹ See Chapter XIX.

² Pronounced Rebenky, for *qu* in Portuguese often has the sound *k*.

This style, although quite a native custom, is often adopted by foreigners, and I recollect that once when I was in the Uruguay Republic, in the Department of Paysandú, where the well-known ox-tongues come from, I was told of an Englishman living in the camp near there who had his "Corona" bordered with sovereigns placed close together, numbering about three hundred. Corona is the name given to the leather covering put on over the sweating-cloth, under the saddle ; it is composed of two large pieces of leather sewn together, the joined edges being previously cut so as to fit the horse's back.

The Englishman I have just referred to was always accompanied, when riding out, by two Peons each carrying a gun, so I was told.

Amongst my pleasantest experiences in travelling will ever remain the recollection of riding through a "Matta virgem" (Virgin forest), with century-old trees towering up almost into the sky, their spreading branches joining in a leafy embrace over my head, and the ground under my feet, or, rather, under my horse's hoofs, thickly covered with verdure forming a soft carpet, partly of the grasses which grow there in such riotous profusion that the ground is entirely protected from the fierce rays of the sun, and partly of the layers upon layers of leaves which have been falling and falling, accumulating for untold ages. One asks one's self what connexion there can be between the mysterious, almost primeval calm of these untrodden forests and the busy centres of civilization with their crowded thoroughfares teeming with jostling, elbowing humanity rushing here, there and everywhere in their hurrying, skurrying motor-

cars. None in very truth. And, indeed, even the quiet spots of a great city have nothing in them of the absolute repose of these remote solitudes, for where the air is always vibrating with the sounds of the busy, active world there cannot be the deep solemn stillness that is in the air itself, undisturbed as it is for miles and miles around in these sanctuaries of Nature, except by the occasional note of a bird or the cry of some wild animal.

It is in journeying across the vast, unpeopled regions of the South American camp that one understands the meaning of the Biblical expression, "The land of the far distance," where the softly undulating hills ripple out endlessly in the clear horizon, with never a final ridge anywhere.

CHAPTER XVI

Rio Grande the seaport of the State of the same name—A city of public functionaries—Pelotas is the next port of call on the way to the capital—Visit of H.M.S. *Beagle*—Railways in this State—Pelotas owes its existence to the “Xarqueadas”—It is a wealthy city—Story of how a certain house there was painted throughout—The giant cactus—One of my sons gets a thorn in his cheek when an infant—Only gets rid of it more than twenty years afterwards—A terrific hailstorm—Roofs and windows smashed—Boom in tiles and window-glass in consequence—The “Xarqueadas”—First started in Pelotas—Now found in various parts of the State—Frequent slaughtering of cattle a brutalizing occupation—Nevertheless it is done as rapidly and neatly as possible—Description of the way it is done at the great establishment at Fray Bentos in the Uruguay Republic—Branding of cattle when young—This marking is prejudicial to the hides when converted into leather—Some animals were branded in a less conspicuous part—The hides rejected in Europe in consequence—The South American Cowboy—His love of music—“Modinhas” a distinctive style of music of a pleasing though simple kind—The people are very fond of dancing—Also of horse-racing—A horse-race will attract great numbers of people from a great distance—Fireworks—Rockets used on every conceivable occasion—The burning of Judas Iscariot in effigy on Easter Saturday—The eve of St. John’s day is a great occasion for bonfires—Also for dances.

RIO GRANDE, as I have already stated, is the seaport of the State of the same name, and is entirely dependent upon this circumstance for its existence, for otherwise it has nothing to especially recommend it. It has been called by Brazilians themselves a city of “Empregados publicos”

(Public functionaries), and this is a description that I will not venture to improve upon.

Pelotas is the next port of call on the way up to the capital, Porto Alegre, and it was while we were living there that we had quite an unusual little diversion in the shape of the arrival of H.M.S. *Beagle*, which came up from Rio Grande. Together with the few other English people living there, we received an invitation to go on board and I still have a pleasant recollection of the friendly welcome we had from the Captain and his staff, and of the delightful time we spent on board. The Captain's name has escaped my memory, after all these years. I had met him previously in Montevideo.

Pelotas is connected with the city of Rio Grande by rail. All the railways in this State, with the exception of the Brazil Great Southern, belong to the Federal Government, and are leased to a Belgian Syndicate styled "Société Auxiliaire de Chemins de fer du Brésil."

Pelotas owes its existence to the "Xarqueadas," of which more anon. It is a prosperous and extremely wealthy city, possessing some good public buildings, handsome houses, public gardens and a fairly good park.

In connexion with one very fine, rather showy private house there, unkind people used to tell the following story anent the way in which the owner succeeded in getting it painted throughout.

He sent for a painter, and contracted with him to undertake the work. When the man had painted a certain portion, he professed himself extremely dissatisfied with the manner in which it was done,

dismissed the painter, and sent for another, whom he immediately set to work—not, be it understood, beginning at the beginning and re-painting what had, as the owner of the house alleged, been so badly done, but continuing to paint from the place where the first man had left off—no doubt this was in order to compare the work of the two men. However, when number two had been at work a little while, he too was given his *congé*, and a third man was called in who was set to work at the point where the second man had left off, and was soon discharged in deep disgrace on account of the unsatisfactory quality of his work. And so this went on, until the whole house was painted, the last man being dismissed on the same plea, and in as deep disgrace as his predecessors. “Si non è vero; è ben trovato.”

I spent a few years in Pelotas, and lived in a “Chacara”¹ a little way outside the town. On one side of the path leading up to the house was a hedge of giant cactus dividing it from the adjoining property. This cactus is very common in the country, and is often used for hedges. It certainly is excellent for keeping intruders out, as it is provided with innumerable thorns, long and very sharp, like needles, and very dangerous to come in contact with. The full-grown ones are fully three inches long.

Of the danger I had an example in my own family: one of my sons, then a little fellow about twelve months old, was out with his nurse one morning

¹ Like the Portuguese “Quinta,” something between a garden and a park. In a chacara there are trees, both of the ornamental and the fruit-bearing kind, and also flowers and vegetables.

and was most incautiously allowed by her to go too close to the cactus, with the result that he got a thorn in his cheek. As soon as he was brought back into the house, I attempted to extract it, but without success, even although I had a fine pair of tweezers to aid me in my endeavour. The thing disappeared in a moment : it seemed almost as if it were possessed of the power of automatic locomotion. I looked inside the child's mouth, but there was no sign of the thorn on the other side of his cheek, it had evidently entered very obliquely, and so there was nothing more to be done. The sign of the prick on his cheek soon disappeared entirely, the boy seemed perfectly well, enjoying excellent health. But some people who knew of the fact, remarked : " Ah, that will reappear some day ! "

About twenty-four years after, my son, who was away on a journey in the State of Minas Geraes, was feeling very poorly, and consulted a doctor. The doctor called in two of his colleagues for a consultation, and they diagnosed a tumour of the liver, and my son was accordingly operated upon, when, to the amazement of the doctors, they discovered a cactus thorn ! Of course, my son could only explain, when he recovered consciousness and was told of this extraordinary fact, how the thing had entered his body.

There is one more detail, an important one, I think, to be recounted which evidently has relation to the foregoing, and that is, that although my son enjoyed good health, when he reached the age of about twenty he suddenly became subject to fits or seizures, which though not frequent, were exceedingly

distressing, but since undergoing the operation I have just referred to he has been troubled no more with them. This, I venture to assert, leads to the very fair conclusion that they were brought on by the presence of that thorn, which had been in his body for nearly twenty-four years, entering at his cheek, and coming, or, rather, being taken out from his liver.

From a medical point of view I think the case would be described as interesting, but from the patient's point of view, which had very much to do with the point of the thorn—and not at all a nice point—it was certainly not entertaining.

* * * * *

It was during the time I was living in Pelotas that I witnessed the most remarkable hailstorm I have ever heard of. I not only have no hesitation in saying, but truth compels me to assert, that by far the greater number of the hailstones were unquestionably larger than a hen's egg of a good size. It was truly terrific. Fortunately it did not last very long, neither did it cover an extensive area.

Needless to say that the streets in the town were deserted in a few seconds. Some animals were killed in the fields. The roofs of the houses were smashed, and the windows exposed to the quarter the wind came from were shattered. The noise was almost deafening while it lasted.

Next morning there was a boom in tiles, and all those who had any to sell were asking ten times the ordinary prices for these very necessary wares, and window-glass rose in price in a corresponding manner. Fortunately for those who had to buy,

such prices did not continue until all the repairs were completed, but abated somewhat. This was a true exemplification of the saying: "'Tis an ill wind that blows nobody good."

That storm was a thing to be remembered, and I have a vivid recollection of it, although it happened more than thirty years ago! Many years after this, while living in Porto Alegre, I saw hailstones fall on two occasions, with only a few days' interval between the two storms, and although they were not so large, still they were of a size to do considerable damage, very many of them being as large as a walnut and some bigger.

Pelotas, as I have already remarked, owes its existence to the "Xarqueadas."

"Xarqueada" and "Xarque,"¹ from which it is derived, are both Brazilian words, that is to say, not of Portuguese origin. The latter term signifies beef dried and salted in a peculiar way, and the former, the place where this is done. It is chiefly for this purpose that cattle-breeding is carried on on so large a scale here.

Many years ago the preparation of this Xarque, or jerked beef, was exclusive to Pelotas, the second city in the then Province of Rio Grande do Sul, and the immense Xarqueadas owned by its wealthiest inhabitants still constitute the principal source from which these latter derive income, although establishments of this kind are now to be found in various

¹ Pronounced respectively Sharrkyahda and Sharrky. Sometimes spelt Charqueada and Charque. The word comes from the Sinchua language, and means dry or salted. Xarque is also called "Carne secca" (Dried beef).

parts of the State. One very important one, called the "Paradão," is in the hands of an English Company, the "Brazilian Extract of Meat and Hide Factory," who have owned it for over twenty years. It is on the banks of the river Jacuhy, for, of course, it is an essential condition that a Xarqueada should be on the bank of a river, as an abundant supply of water is a *sine quâ non*. And at the time of my leaving the country a similar establishment was being fitted up, on the banks of the river Ibicuhy, just above its junction with the Uruguay, and I suppose it is now in working order. This also, I understood, was the property of an Englishman who had been for many years resident in the neighbouring Republic of Argentina, and who had lately been acquiring much land in this district, for the purpose of rearing cattle, an industry to which my fellow-countrymen are increasingly turning their attention in the Argentine and Uruguay Republics, and it is one well deserving their consideration, seeing that, generally speaking, it gives a return of about 30 per cent. on the outlay.

The slaughtering of cattle at the Xarqueadas, or as they are called in the two neighbouring Spanish-speaking Republics of Argentina and Uruguay, "Saladeros," is work which, whilst admitting its necessity, I think must have a brutalizing tendency when one reflects that the men engaged in it have to kill hundreds of animals daily.

At the well-known and old-established "Saladero" at Fray Bentos as many as a thousand head of cattle are slaughtered in one day, sometimes. It is only just, however, to state that this work is

carried out as speedily and neatly as possible. The animals are all herded together in a kind of pen fenced in on all sides, and are then urged forward, a few at a time, into an adjoining enclosure, equally fenced in, but of much more circumscribed limits, where, one by one, and without any loss of time, they are lassoed by a man who stands on an elevated plank for this purpose, and each animal, as the lasso falls over its horns, is dragged forward immediately along a narrow passage, over well greased boards, to a bar against which its head is firmly fixed, and it is then finished with great despatch and dexterity, a knife being plunged into the back of its head and entering the medulla oblongata.

The lasso is a continuation of a long plaited leather cord which passes over a roller where the animal is to be drawn up, and is attached to the girths of two horses standing there in readiness, the moment the ox is lassoed, they gallop forward, urged on by their riders, and thus the animal is rendered powerless at once.

It is over thirty years since I visited this great Saladero, but I am able to give the foregoing description from memory, as my recollection of all I saw there is very vivid.

The dried and salted beef, or xarque, which is prepared in the south of Brazil, is sent up to the northern States in great quantities, and the hides are exported to North America and Europe.

The cattle are all marked, or branded, and this is done when the animals are quite young. They are lassoed, thrown down on the ground, and a hot iron is applied to their flank. This operation is

always attended with more or less danger, and the men engaged in the work sometimes get badly hurt by the animals temporarily maddened, by the combined influence of fright and pain.

This marking is naturally somewhat prejudicial to the hides when they are converted into leather, as it occurs in about the best part of the skin, and some time ago some cattle owners, thinking to mend matters, had their animals branded in a less conspicuous part, but the hides, on their arrival in Europe, were regarded with suspicion, and even, I believe, rejected in consequence, and ultimately sold at a loss, although nowise inferior in quality.

The "Gaúcho"¹ (pronounced Gaooshoo) of South America, like the North American Cowboy, may be said to spend his life in the saddle, but I am not aware that the latter shares the great love of music which is a remarkable characteristic of his southern confrère.

This love of music is almost universal amongst the people of the South American plains, and although it may not extend to works of a high or classic kind, there is one kind, very common out there, which has quite a distinctive style of its own. I refer to the "Modinhas" of Brazil, which are very pleasing to the ear, although very simple both as regards words and music. They are generally plaintive in style, and, when set in a minor key and sung to a guitar, are strangely haunting. One occasionally hears some that are very spirited, and others of an exceedingly droll character.

¹ Also called "Vaqueiro," which is the real Portuguese term, but Gaucho is more common in the south.



GAÚCHO WITH GUITAR.

It is no uncommon thing to see a "Gaúcho" sitting outside his cabin thrumming a guitar and singing some of these "Modinhas" of an evening, and quite often it may happen that both music and words are his own composition.

Dancing is an immensely popular form of recreation, even in those places where the only music to dance to may be an accordion purchased at the nearest "Venda."

A "Venda," I should explain, is, like the Spanish "Venta," a kind of general provision store. At the camp vendas anything may be found, from Bass's Pale Ale (Pahly-ahly, they call it there) to accordions; from Huntley & Palmers' Biscuits to bootlaces and frying-pans.

Horse-racing is likewise a favourite pastime, and one much indulged in, even in the remotest places in the camp, where a casual traveller might think it difficult to assemble a dozen people, they will flock in in great numbers to witness a race, coming from many miles distant.

A remarkable fondness for fireworks, and especially for sky-rockets, is quite a feature of the camp, and not only of the camp itself, but of all the camp towns. The rockets are made with dynamite so as to give a loud report as they go off, and they are used on every conceivable occasion for rejoicing, and this at almost any time of the day and night, even in broad daylight, when the only appreciable effect is the noise—that is to say, if one does not get a spent stick on one's head, or if a stray rocket, in an erratic course, does not come straight at one, flying in a horizontal direction,

instead of ascending skywards. I have, on more than one occasion, seen people very narrowly escape this sort of accident, although as a rule they are adepts at this little pastime, at which they have such constant practice. The making of fireworks should be a profitable business.

Our historic Guy Fawkes, of pyrotechnic fame, has his counterpart in Brazil in Judas Iscariot, who is burned in effigy on Easter Saturday, "Sab-bado de Alleluia," as the day is called there. Various figures, very similar to the English Guy, are fixed up, either in the market-place or at corners of the streets, the night before in readiness, and, on Saturday morning, when the bells start ringing at nine o'clock, the people set fire to the "Judas," as they call it. I grieve to state that enemies are sometimes burned in effigy in this manner, for, although the figure is still called a "Judas" it is dressed up to look like some person against whom one may have a grudge.

St. John's Eve, "Vespera de São João" (mid-winter in the southern hemisphere), is always celebrated with bonfires, rockets, squibs and crackers and so on. *The* dance of the winter season always takes place on this night.

The Tango which has suddenly captivated not only London, but Paris and Berlin and, I suppose, other social centres, is the classic dance of South America, but was, curiously enough, going out of fashion when I left the country.

CHAPTER XVII

The disputed territory of "Missões," or "Misiones"—Many traces of the work of the Jesuits in this region—Seven towns founded in their various settlements—Traces of their presence to be found on the opposite side also—Gold found in this State—Also copper—Semi-precious stones—Some clear white stones made yellow by firing—Hollow stones with water in them—Visit to a gentleman who had a collection of articles made by the Indians of Matto Grosso—A fine, strong bow made by them—Also a curiously worked hammock—The "Bola" an instrument of warfare—Used by the Indians—Solis, the Spanish explorer, killed by one—Favourite amusement of Indian children—The wild fig-tree—One of immense size—The Umbú grows rapidly to great proportions—Quite different from the Umbú of the north—Quebraxo—Bamboos—The pine-tree—Fruit or nut is very nutritious—The Mimosa—The flora of Brazil unrivalled in beauty and variety—Not so with the fauna—Wild animals seem to be more scarce—The "Jacaré," or South American alligator—Birds numerous and beautiful—The "Sabiá"—The humming-bird—The "Araponga"—Game plentiful—Destruction of game at all seasons—Practice of exploding dynamite cartridges in the rivers to bring up fish—The "Abestruz"—The heron—Wild cats—Deer—Wild boar, or "Javalí"—Many more.

IN the north-western portion of this State (we are still in Rio Grande do Sul) there is a wide tract of land known by the name of "Missões"¹ to the Brazilians, or "Misiones" to the Spanish

¹ This was the debatable land between Brazil and Argentina, the possession of which was claimed by both countries during long years of wrangling and dispute. It was finally awarded to Brazil by Arbitration in the year 1906.

Americans, where there are indications of the presence of the Jesuits, who were expelled the country in January, 1759. The work left by them, which may still be seen in the present day, consists of Churches built by the Indians under their direction during the time they were engaged in their task of Christianizing and civilizing these aborigines.

There were seven centres in this region where the Jesuit Missionaries founded their settlements, namely, São Miguel, Santo Angelo (in Portuguese one says São before a consonant and Santo before the vowel, for the sake of euphony, needless to say), São João, São Luiz, São Lourenço, São Borja and Santiago.

The first-named on the list was their capital, and the Church there still bears evident traces of having possessed some importance, although the place itself possesses none in the present day. Of all the places enumerated São Borja is the most flourishing at the present time, and it owes its present prosperity and development to its excellent position, for it lies on the river Uruguay, opposite the frontier of the Argentine Republic, all the others being inland.

The former presence of the Jesuits is also attested by some small towns, sprung from their settlements, in the neighbouring Province of Corrientes, on the opposite side of the river Uruguay (in Argentina), in one of which, named La Cruz, a sun-dial erected by them is still standing.

Although this State, as I have already mentioned, is chiefly a cattle-breeding region, being therefore mainly pastoral, it is also, as we have likewise seen, very rich in agricultural resources in some regions,

and beyond that it possesses mineral wealth of no mean order. There appears to be little room for doubt that gold and silver were mined there, for these precious metals are to be found in the Churches I have just referred to bearing witness to the fact, and there are indications that suggest that they were wrought on the spot. Moreover, at a place called Lavras, gold has been mined for some years past, although, I believe, without any profit to the companies that have owned it. It has passed through the hands of three, to my certain knowledge, for I know the place very well.

There is also a copper mine in this vicinity, newly started, giving good results, I understand; and semi-precious stones are also found here in more or less abundance, especially at a place called Soledade, where Agate, Chalcedony and Rock-crystal are often found in great quantities.

At this latter place they bake fine white stones until they assume a light brown colour, a trifle darker than yellow topaz, and export them to Germany. These stones look so natural in colour after the baking that possibly the uninitiated may be deceived by their appearance, but that this process is employed I know, for I have seen the stones both before and after the firing.

Amongst the stones found in this region there are some very curious ones which are evidently hollow, and contain water which can be seen in the more transparent ones and heard on shaking the opaque ones, although how it got there is a point for geologists to investigate.

Whilst on the subject of curios, I may mention

a visit I once paid to a gentleman who had succeeded in making a very interesting collection—during a long journey inland through the State of Matto Grosso—of various articles made by the Indians there. It consisted of stone implements, very symmetrically made and well finished, spears, arrow-heads, etc. A fine bow, requiring a very strong arm to draw it—perhaps it had belonged to the Ulysses of the tribe. I also saw a hammock curiously worked and very handsome in effect, neatly-made baskets, some of which very diminutive in size and delicate in texture, and, of course, the better-known feather ornaments which comprise the Indian's paraphernalia.

Amongst the stone implements of warfare of the Indian, one that played an important part in his equipment was the "Bola," or, as it is generally spoken of in the plural, "Bolas." These were of varying sizes and different shapes, some spherical, some elongated and tapering equally at both ends, others tapering more at one end than at the other, like an egg, in fact, and they generally had a groove running round their middle, by means of which a cord was firmly attached to them. Those used by the "Tropeiros"¹ in the present day are not necessarily made of stone: they may be made of lead or anything heavy enough for the purpose, and are enclosed in a small leathern pouch to which the end of the cord is attached. There are often three of these bolas: one at each end of the cord and one in the middle, or, rather, they attach to the

¹ Tropeiro, literally Trooper in English, is really only another name for Cowboy.

middle of this cord a second much shorter one, to the end of which the third bola is fastened. This third bola is held firmly in the hand whilst the others are whirled rapidly round the head several times, and then the whole thing is let go at the target. As the man throwing the bolas is generally mounted and riding full gallop, it will readily be understood that the bolas travel through the air with extraordinary swiftness and power, and wind themselves round the object aimed at. The Tropeiros use them in the present day for catching wild horses and ostriches, when it is not convenient to employ the lasso. Frequently only one bola is used.

The Indians used the bola with deadly effect in warfare. The Spanish explorer, Solis, the discoverer of the River Plate, was killed by a Charrúa Indian with one of these primitive weapons, which crushed his skull.

It has been thought by some historians that the Indians used only one bola, but it appears that they understood the use of the three, as three are often found together. Some travellers and explorers who have been a great deal amongst the Indians say that even the children are experts at throwing the bola, and that it is their favourite amusement, in the Indian villages, to catch fowls and chickens in this way.

* * * *

Amongst the trees deserving special mention in this State, besides those already referred to in Chapter V, are the wild fig-tree and the Umbú. The former attains to magnificent proportions. I recollect one, at a place called Barra do Ribeiro, the outspreading

branches of which measured at least thirty metres across, and under the protecting shade of which whole families used to picnic.

The Umbú is a tree of rapid growth and dense foliage which affords an almost impenetrable protection against the rays of the sun. Its trunk, which sometimes measures two metres (over two yards), in diameter, is of so light and spongy a substance as to hardly deserve the name of timber. It is almost incombustible, but its ashes yield a rich potash. It has nothing in common with the Umbú, or Imbú, of the north of Brazil, the fruit of which is prepared with milk and sugar and is considered a great delicacy.

Another exceedingly durable kind of wood which is, I believe, peculiar to this State is "Quebracho," or "Quebraxo," as it is sometimes spelled. I was told by an engineer that he had known railway sleepers made of this wood to last as long as twenty-five years, and that once a nail is driven in to one of them it cannot be extracted again—the head will break, but the nail will not come out.

Bamboos flourish here, particularly on sandy or gravel soil, and offer a very grateful shade. To any one who has never seen a bamboo grove this may seem hardly possible, as one bamboo by itself looks like a long, feathery reed, but, growing in clusters, as they do, with the foliage well distributed up each separate reed the effect is that of a rich green canopy. The sound produced by the wind playing lightly amongst these tufted reeds is quite eerie.

The pine-tree is quite common in this State, it is chiefly of the red, resinous variety, bearing

fruit, not unlike a pine-apple in appearance, which is composed of a number of cone-shaped sections. The pine-fruit is eaten boiled or baked, like chestnuts, which it resembles in taste.

These pines yield their fruit, or nut, in great abundance every third or fourth year, increasing and decreasing very regularly. Poor people depend upon it to a considerable extent as a food in some regions, and cattle fatten on it readily.

The beautiful Mimosa grows in wild profusion, and often forms hedges in the same way that the hawthorn does here in England. There are two varieties of it: the bush, which is generally called "Maricá," and the tree. The latter gives a finer blossom, of a more delicate tint.

Whereas in the beauty and variety of her flora Brazil is unrivalled, I do not know that the same applies in respect of her fauna. Whether wild animals are becoming rare, or whether it is that they are receding further and further into the depths of the great forests, flying before the approach of man, I cannot tell, but their skins are not found for sale so frequently as used formerly to be the case. The handsomest of these is that of the Ounce, or Jaguar, generally called "Tigre" (Tiger) in the south and Jaguar in the north of Brazil. The Jaguatirica, or small Jaguar, has also a handsomely marked skin.

There is also the "Leão," or Lion, so-called, which is no other, I believe, than the Puma, of which there is, besides the tawny-coloured variety, a black species as well.

The "Jacaré," or South American alligator,

however, is still to be found on the banks of nearly all the great Brazilian rivers. The young are sometimes brought down by the rivers when they are in flood, and one about a yard and a half long was caught not far from our house in Porto Alegre when we were living near the river Guahyba.

Amongst the birds I give first place to the parrots by reason of sheer number, for these birds and their smaller brethren, the "Periquitos," or Parrakeets, are sometimes to be seen, and heard, flying along in a great screeching cloud, only to descend upon some "Milho" (Indian corn) plantation and thoroughly devastate it, if they get the chance. As a song-bird the "Sabiá" has far and away the first place: it has a low-toned note of great pathos, which is the favourite theme of many a Brazilian poet. The prize for beauty goes, of course, to the dainty little humming-bird, with its gem-like body, sometimes emerald green, sometimes deep ruby, or again brilliant purple or golden-bronze in hue. It is indeed a pretty sight to see one hanging by its long, slender beak to the calix of the camellia, its favourite flower, drawing from its depths the honey on which it lives, sustaining itself on its little gossamer wings all the time, for it never alights on any flower to draw its sustenance from it.

I must not forget to mention the "Araponga," which is a very singular bird with the extraordinary power of emitting a loud, sharp, ringing note, exactly like a hard blow on a blacksmith's anvil. The similarity is perfect in tone, force and duration, as it is produced in true staccato manner.

The first time I had an opportunity of hearing

this I could scarcely believe, although I had been old of it, that the sound did not come from some smith's forge, and looked about me to see if there were such a thing in the vicinity, but there certainly was not. I have since then seen and heard this bird at the same time. It is sometimes called "Ferreiro," which means blacksmith, and is about the size of a pigeon. By its plumage it has nothing to attract one, but by its note it undoubtedly has, being indeed so remarkable that it must be heard to be thoroughly appreciated.

Game, of course, is plentiful. Wild duck, of several species, are to be found along the banks of the streams and on the marshes. Partridges are likewise found there in great numbers: they are generally nice and plump, and the South American pheasant is also very good, but these birds have not the same flavour as European birds.

The destruction of game at all seasons of the year without restriction or regulation on the part of the authorities has resulted in greatly reducing some species peculiar to Brazil.

Referring to this recalls to my mind something I have seen done, and which is unpardonable, and that is the exploding of dynamite cartridges in the rivers in order to bring up a quantity of fish to the surface. This is done, too, at any season, and, I believe, quite frequently. The numbers of fish destroyed by this method cannot easily be estimated.

The American ostrich, or "Abestruz," also abounds, and the heron or "Garça," commonly called "João Grande" (Big John), is to be found in most of the "Banhados," or marshes.

The forests teem with monkeys, wild cats, and four-footed game, such as deer, a species of wild boar called "Javalí," and a kind of otter, not to mention rabbits, hares and many more which it would be tedious to mention.

CHAPTER XVIII

Porto Alegre, the capital of the State of Rio Grande do Sul—Excellent situation—Four rivers all converging to it—These all flow into the Lake—Appropriate name—Pleasant appearance—Very hilly—Commercially flourishing—German type much in evidence—German merchants more attentive to the wishes of their customers than English merchants—Trade with Brazil rapidly increasing—Markets worth studying—Typewriters—Public buildings—The theatre the property of the State—Musical societies—Three racecourses—Much private entertainment—People very sociable—The Carnival—Difference between Carnival in the south and in Rio de Janeiro and some other parts of Brazil—Old game of “Entrudo” superseded by confetti-throwing—Custom of naming streets after public men—Dates of historic events also given to streets—The names of streets are often changed—How a group set out one evening to pull down the name of a street and substitute another—Tram-cars—Trial of new electric tram-car one evening.

PORTO ALEGRE, the capital of the State of Rio Grande do Sul, is admirably situated in one respect at least, having four rivers all converging towards it, namely, the Jacuhy, the Cahy, the Gravatahy and the Rio dos Sinos. These four rivers all uniting form the Guahyba, commonly spoken of as a fifth river, although in reality it is the junction of the four above-named rivers all flowing into the Lagôa dos Patos.

The population of Porto Alegre is variously estimated at from 80,000 to 100,000 inhabitants. Its name is well deserved, for “alegre” means

bright or cheerful, and that certainly is the impression one has of it on approaching its picturesque shores. It is built on a low-browed hill, and many of its streets are hilly—indeed, some of them are so steep as to be impracticable for ordinary horse traffic, and are generally avoided by pedestrians too.

Commercially speaking this is a flourishing and prosperous town, and possesses five banks, three of which are national and two foreign. One of the former is of long standing, has a considerable amount of capital, and does a highly remunerative business.

The German type is much in evidence here, as, besides the people connected with German houses of business, which are exceedingly numerous, there are many who are native-born descendants of the old German Colonists.

And here I must stay a moment to mention a subject to which I should like to call attention before concluding this book, as it is a matter I believe to be of vital interest to the extension and maintenance of English commercial relations with Brazil, although it is often treated by my countrymen as if it were of no account, and therein lies the very pith of my subject. I refer to the inflexible—may I say, stubborn way?—in which English merchants refuse to yield or to adapt themselves to the customs and usages of those with whom they may be dealing.

To give an example: there are certain imported articles of commerce that the merchant in Brazil desires should be prepared, or got up, in a certain

way, in order to please the ultimate purchaser or consumer. If this particular way does not happen to be in accordance with English custom, or English modes of manufacture, the request is entirely disregarded. I have heard frequent complaints, and have known of loss of business resulting from this sort of thing.

The motto of English merchants, judging by some, at any rate, who do business with Brazil, seems to be: "You must take it our way, or go without," and they do go without, as to the English goods, and get them from Germany instead. The Germans are most accommodating and adaptable on this point: their travellers go round studying the markets to learn what goods are required, and how they are required, and whatsoever way may be preferred, that way is adopted by them. Sometimes the matter may be a very trivial one to comply with, but, if it pleases the consumer, and influences the sale of the article, it is surely worth considering. I know for a positive fact, because I have witnessed it myself, that a possible purchaser may come to a decision for or against a given article merely from the way in which it is got up, quite apart from its quality.

It is a fair supposition that business houses wish to do business, but some of them go just the way to lose it. In these times of keen competition it will not pay to take a stand of supreme indifference as to the wishes of people—to impose your way upon them, after the manner of a certain Cabinet Minister of the present day with the British nation.

The Brazilian markets are worth studying and

the trade is worth competing for, even should it be necessary to concede a point now and again and slightly modify some existing mode of procedure or manufacture. Possibly some manufacturers or heads of business firms here may say I do not understand their methods of working, or their trade customs. Possibly I do not. But, and this is a big "But," the Germans make it their business to understand their customers' wishes and to suit them, as I have already pointed out, so I take it for granted that Englishmen can do the same. If not, then they must admit that the Germans can do what they cannot !

Another very great stumbling-block in the way of English trade with Brazil is the question of weights and measures. In Brazil, as in most countries in the present day, they use the Decimal System. German merchants send their goods out weighed and measured according to this system, and with the prices all marked in the national currency, to boot. English merchants continue to quote in yards, feet, inches and all the other measures and weights, which are a puzzle and a weariness to those familiar with the simplicity of the Decimal System, and give their prices in English currency.

The value of goods imported by Brazil during the year 1909 exceeded £37,000,000—a good proof of the purchasing power of the nation—and the principal exports far surpassed this figure in the same year, being more than £63,000,000.

Yet another point of the utmost importance is that English houses should send out travellers who know the Portuguese language—not with a mere

smattering of Spanish which they sometimes seem to think will do quite as well—and that they, the travellers, I mean, should have an engaging manner, as Brazilians are very sensitive to treatment.

In the matter of correspondence, it is advisable that this should be in Portuguese. I know of one firm of high standing here that seems to make a point of writing in Spanish to Brazil and in French to Portugal, albeit there are facilities in their own office for writing in Portuguese! Presumably, as they write out asking for orders and submitting estimates, propositions and tenders and so on, they are moderately anxious to secure business with these two countries, yet they will overlook a matter in which they could influence their clients' feelings!

Talking of business leads one by a kind of natural sequence, or at any rate, by an almost imperceptible transition, to speak of Typewriters, and I think the following story concerning their invention is worth recounting. I have heard it from a private source, and have likewise seen it publicly stated in a newspaper.

A priest (I think a Frenchman) in the State of Maranhão, after much patient labour and perseverance, had succeeded, entirely by himself, in constructing a workable typewriting machine, partly of wood and partly of metal. Some little time after a North American passed that way, and the priest meeting him, very incautiously entered into conversation with him on the subject of his invention. The American expressed a wish to see the result of his labours; an opportunity was readily afforded

him to do so. After a brief sojourn in the city, the stranger being about to return to his native land, called on the priest and offered to take his model with him and get the machine properly made in the States. The priest quite unsuspectingly confided it to him, and it is almost needless to say, he never received his model back, neither did he ever have the one that was to have been "properly made" from it. He likewise never received any further communication from his friendly visitor, nor did he ever get any benefit from his ingenuity and labour.

This recalls to my mind the case of the Goodyear Vulcanite Rubber Patents that came before the Law Courts in the States many years ago.

But we have wandered away from Porto Alegre and its pleasant prospects. The public buildings of note here are : the Eschola de Guerra,¹ the largest building in the place ; the Santa Casa de Misericordia, or National Hospital, a well-endowed institution where bounteous charity is dispensed to the poor ; and the Beneficencia Portuguese, one of the admirable institutions I have already referred to elsewhere.² The Intendencia Municipal, which corresponds to the Town Hall here, is a handsome building, and a new Presidential Palace is about to be built, the design for which was supplied by a French architect.

Porto Alegre possesses one fair-sized theatre, the property of the State, which is let when required.

¹ School of War. Formerly the Eschola Militar, or Military College.

² Chapter VII, page 72.

European companies, dramatic, operatic, etc., etc., visit there from time to time. There are one or two musical societies, philharmonic, choral, etc., that give very good concerts, and there are three race-courses, where races are run on Sundays and holidays, but otherwise there is no amusement of a public or semi-public character to speak of.¹

On the other hand, there is a great deal of private entertainment, mostly of an informal kind, and the people are extremely sociable and pleasant. As I have already remarked in another chapter,² they are exceedingly fond of dancing, and there are two or three clubs there, each of which gives a very good annual ball, besides several societies which exist for the exclusive purpose of giving monthly dances in the cool season.

The Carnival is one of the great events of the year, and, in their different ways, all classes of society take an active part in the festivities, which latter always terminate with a dance on Shrove Tuesday. This is quite a big affair—very often, indeed, the chief social function of the year. It is customary to select a “Queen of the Carnival,” generally the daughter of one of the leading merchants in the place; and on Carnival Sunday she drives through the streets of the city dressed in some fancy costume and seated in a richly-decorated car, attended by her court and by a guard of honour, or bodyguard, all of whom are likewise dressed in rich fancy costume.

¹ I am informed that Picture Theatres have made a very successful appearance in Porto Alegre since I left there.]

² Chapter XVI, page 187.

I pause here to remark that Carnival in the State of Rio Grande do Sul is totally different in character from what it is in Rio de Janeiro and some other parts of Brazil. In the south a Carnival procession, as it is called there, is as harmless in character and pretty to look at as the Pageants which were all the rage here in England a few years ago. I mention this, because foreigners who may have chanced to be in Rio at Carnival time and who have never seen the Carnival in the south might be surprised to hear it.

Confetti-throwing has now fortunately quite superseded the old game of "Entrudo," which was one of the great features of Carnival. This game used to commence some days—indeed, two or three weeks—before the actual Carnival, and consisted in playing with "Bisnagas" (a kind of collapsible tube such as are now used for Hazeline, or Lanoline), filled with scented water, which the young men and maidens used to squirt at one another. As the days went on, however, the fun grew faster and more furious, and "Limões" were used instead. "Limão" is the Portuguese for lemon, and indeed, they were not unlike lemons in size and colour. They were made of very thin wax and, like the bisnagas, filled with scented water. With these Limões the parties engaged in the game would pelt one another. The most approved fashion was for the young men to come up to the house they intended to attack, accompanied by a negro carrying a *taboleiro*¹ laden with these

¹ For an explanation of this word see Chapter VI, page 63.



NATIONAL MUSEUM, RIO DE JANEIRO.

From "Brazils in 1902."



ILHA DAS FLORES, BAY OF RIO EMIGRANTS' HOSTEL.

From "Brazils in 1902."

wax grenades, and at the windows of the house thus signalled out the ladies would appear, also provided with trays full of these missiles, and the battle then commenced, each party trying to aim at the other, and generally with more or less success, judging by the coughs and colds, not to mention other complaints of a graver nature, which always followed upon these high revels.

* * * * *

It was while I was in Porto Alegre that a very ludicrous episode occurred in connexion with the alteration of the name of a street. I should explain first that it is the custom in Brazil to bestow the names of public men on their streets, such as generals, admirals, leading public men and so on. The names derived from this latter source are sometimes subject to alteration, especially when used during the lifetime of the person after whom the street is named, for, as the popularity of a great political leader waxes or wanes, so does the desire to have a street named after him, and as it is only too possible for a public man to lose favour, or at any rate to seriously displease his political opponents, should they come into power, his name may be officially removed and another substituted.

I have known some streets with three names and yet a fourth suggested. In some instances I have noticed that it is the first that remains in common use among the people, although all the others may have appeared in rotation on the name plates.

They also make use of dates which have an

historical significance as names of streets, or squares, for instance: Rua Sete de Setembro (Seventh of September Street), in commemoration of the Independence of Brazil, as it was on that day in the year 1822 that Dom Pedro I proclaimed the secession of Brazil from Portugal.¹ Another date to be found, I suppose, in every town in Brazil is Quinze de Novembro (Fifteenth of November), being the date of the proclamation of the Republic.² This date is generally given to public squares. Treze de Maio (Thirteenth of May) is another very favourite date, as it is the anniversary of the day on which the law was signed by the Princess Isabel, as Regent of the Empire, declaring slavery extinct.³ Then there is the Rua Primeiro de Março (First of March) in Rio de Janeiro, a very handsome street it is. The date is that of the Battle of Humaytá, which ended the War with Paraguay.

Now for my story: at the close of the year 1892 a new President had just been elected for the State, and it was decided to change the names of two of the streets of the capital, as neither of the men after whom they were named was *persona grata* with the party then in power. Accordingly, one evening, a numerous party of enthusiasts set out to perform the task. They arrived at the first street, removed all the name plates and substituted the new ones, and then marched off to the other, some distance away, which bore the name of Silveira Martins, after Gaspar Silveira Martins, a man who had been first, Deputy, then Senator, Conselheiro

¹ See Chapter X, page 108.

² See Chapter XI, page 118.

³ See Chapter X, page 110.

(Councillor), and also the last President of Rio Grande do Sul under the Empire, an exceedingly popular man.

Some of the newspapers next day narrated, in a very jubilant tone, how "Um grupo de populares"¹ had gone to this street and torn down the name, but the truth was, that when the group arrived they found no plates to tear down, as they had never been put up, a fact they had quite forgotten or overlooked in their eagerness to proceed to the spot to pull them down. The name had been adopted by the people, but had never been officially put up.

To thoroughly appreciate the foregoing it is necessary to know that these things are always done with an exuberance of enthusiasm which ordinary words are too meagre to describe, and generally to the accompaniment of rockets and a brass band. And when one is worked up to such a pitch, and after walking nearly two miles to achieve one's object, to find it impossible of consummation must have been ³cruelly flat, more especially as the fiasco was due to forgetfulness, or ignorance of the fact that the obnoxious plates had never been put up, for, of course, to wrench them down in an impetus of heroic ardour was the all-important thing.

* * * * *

¹ This is one of those expressions that baffle translation. It reads as if it signified a group of popular men, but it is used to designate a group of people, or of men taken from the people; the Republican Papers having invented it, so to speak, to describe the parties or groups of their ardent adherents and supporters who were always ready to make little public demonstrations of this nature for them.

The tram-cars which have been in use in Porto Alegre for many years were originally mule-drawn, but electric traction was substituted in 1908 for animal traction, a thing which all lovers of animals should rejoice to know, as the way the wretched animals were whipped and lashed into drawing the over-crowded cars on Sundays and other festive occasions, when there were not enough cars for the people to ride in, was distressing to behold.

When the contractors had completed the work for running the new cars a preliminary trial was made late one night in order to test if all was in perfect working order—as usual in such cases, of course. The pole on top of the car was found not to press with sufficient force on the overhead wire, and the power of the spring was increased and was ultimately found to be excessive, whereupon, just to finish the trial, a negro was stationed on the top of the car to hold on to the pole so that it should not exert too much pressure on the overhead wire. As they were going round a corner the pulley at the end of the pole got out of gear with the wire, the pole suddenly shot up in the air, and pulled the man completely off his feet and landed him in the road beneath. The pulley shot off the rod, went over the top of a house into the yard behind, and only just missed the head of a woman who happened to be standing near. Fortunately the man was not seriously hurt.

CHAPTER XIX

The equine and bovine species not indigenous to South America—South American wild boar—The Llama—Vicunha—These both known and made use of in some parts—Also the Alpaca—The Portuguese introduce domestic cattle—Much land suitable for breeding and rearing them—A very lucrative industry—Some States depend on others for their supply—The long distances traversed by large droves of cattle sometimes—Difficulties on the way—Cattle weakened thereby—Cattle fairs in some States—Exhibitions—Good results—Number of Xarqueadas—Number of cattle slaughtered in them—The Brazilian horse—Its origin—Very enduring—The “Marchador”—Its special gait—Easy riding—Amusing mistake in the use of the word “cantar”—Sheep-rearing—Goats.

SOUTH AMERICA did not possess any representative of the equine race at the time of the discovery of the continent by the Europeans.¹

The bovine species was also unknown to this continent, but pigs, on the contrary, numbered several varieties, one of which is the “Javalí” (sometimes called “Pecarí”), or South American wild boar, but no attempt appears ever to have been made to domesticate this animal. Other than the Llama, the Vicunha (Spanish Vicuña) and the Alpaca, all of which have rendered valuable

¹ All who have read Prescott's *Conquest of Perú* will recollect that Pizarro's mounted followers caused as much surprise and even fear amongst the Peruvians as those of Cortés had inspired in Mexico.

services as beasts of burden in the region of the Andes, the Indians of Brazil had absolutely no domestic animal.

The Portuguese colonizers of the country naturally attended at once to the introduction of cattle, the various species of which have all thriven rapidly.

With its limitless plains, its various altitudes of soil and its immense hydrographical system, Brazil offers most favourable conditions for the breeding and rearing of cattle.

In the southern States cattle-rearing is carried on to a considerable extent, especially in Rio Grande do Sul, where, as already mentioned,¹ it is the principal industry.

In the States of Goyaz, Matto Grosso and Minas Geraes, and also in the western portion of the State of São Paulo and the high uplands of the States of Bahia, Piauhy and Maranhão, there are wide areas appropriate for this very lucrative industry.

I pause here to mention that cattle-breeding brings in 30 per cent., on an average, of the capital invested, so that in three years' time one's original outlay is, broadly speaking, doubled.

The State of Amazonas, although possessing more than a thousand square miles of land in the valley of the Rio Branco admirably adapted for the rearing of cattle, imports her supplies from the other States. The reason for this is not far to seek : in this State rubber-trees abound,² and the popula-

¹ See Chapter XV, page 174.

² See Chapter XXV, page 265.



AVENIDA KOELER, PETROPOLIS.
From "Brazil in 1912."



MANDIOCA PLANTATION, S. PAULO.
From "Brazil in 1912."

tion, by no means numerous, is more attracted by the immediate return yielded by this valuable gum.

The State of Piauhy in the north also raises a great number of cattle, whilst the city of Rio de Janeiro and also of São Paulo get their supplies from Minas Geraes, Goyaz and Matto Grosso. The cattle from the last-named State coming from a distance, sometimes, of a thousand kilometres, and passing through regions where there are neither lodgings for the drovers nor pens for the cattle. A numerous mounted staff and a pack of mules laden with provisions are indispensable for these long journeys.

A drove may consist of any number from 1,000 to 2,000 head, which is subdivided into smaller herds, all of which, however, keep more or less together. The country they traverse in such a long journey naturally varies very much, and many are the obstacles to be overcome, such as marshy grounds thick with mud, forests where the animals easily go astray, broad and deep rivers across which they are only made to swim with great difficulty. Added to which, cattle are subject to frequent sudden panic, and will dash away furiously, pressing close upon one another in such a way that their horns clash together, making a noise that can be heard a long way off. It is a labour of time to restore order amongst them after one of these stampedes.

After experiencing such vicissitudes, it is no matter for surprise that these droves should arrive at their destination weakened by fatigue and perceptibly reduced in number by accidents of all kinds. Of course, on arrival, they are turned on to

good grazing grounds and allowed to fatten for some months, after which they are distributed to the various localities where they are required for consumption.

The great delay and the difficulties of transport will before long be, if not done away with, at least considerably reduced, as there are railroads already in course of construction with a view to linking up the coast and the interior of the States of Goyaz and Matto Grosso. The first-named State supplies a great deal of cattle to Central Brazil, being in easier communication than the distant State of Matto Grosso.

Numerous official fairs were instituted in Brazil under the colonial régime, but since the advent of railways, and owing to improvements in other means of communication, they have little by little lost their importance. In the interior, however, they are still kept up in some of the States, those at Sant'Anna, Curralinho and Candeúba in the State of Bahia being especially worthy of mention, whilst in the State of Parahyba do Norte fairs are still held at Brejo d'Areia and Itabaína. At the latter place the average annual sale of horned cattle is 25,000 head.

In addition to these fairs, which owe their continuance to custom and tradition, there are some official fairs which are still held at the present time, the most important being those of Tres Corações, Bemfica and Sitio in the State of Minas Geraes, where all the cattle intended for the consumption of the city of Rio de Janeiro are sold.

The State of Rio Grande do Sul has recently

inaugurated a most useful institution, namely, Exhibition Fairs, for the purpose of improving the various breeds by fostering competition and facilitating the purchase of the best specimens, and the State of Minas Geraes has lately followed this excellent example.

The Departmental Exhibitions established some time ago by the Government of São Paulo have given very satisfactory results.

In the northern States beef, called "Carne de vento," which signifies beef dried in the air, or literally in the wind, is prepared, and also "Carne de sol," meat or beef dried in the sun, but only for home consumption.

The State of Rio Grande do Sul possesses twenty-four Xarqueadas,¹ and in Matto Grosso there are several. About 60,000 head of cattle are slaughtered annually at these establishments in the last-named State, and more than 600,000 at those in Rio Grande do Sul.

It is estimated that the annual consumption of Xarque in Brazil is about 75,000,000 kilogrammes.

Although the output at the Xarqueadas has increased considerably during the last few years, Brazil still imports large quantities of desiccated beef from the neighbouring Republics of the River Plate.

The Brazilian horse, although claiming descent from Arabian ancestors originally imported into the country by the Portuguese, has degenerated sadly, owing partly to lack of good breeding methods and partly to want of care.

For an explanation of this word see page 183.

Generally speaking the horses are rather low in build, but possessed of decidedly great powers of resistance and endurance, and this notwithstanding the poor attention bestowed upon them. Of their remarkable power of endurance I have had practical experience.

The "Marchador," which owes its name to a special kind of pace or gait, is particularly worthy of mention. This step is, I believe, quite unknown in England: it is neither a canter nor a trot, but something between the two. I must confess I can think of no better way of describing it, but I can say that it makes very easy riding. I remember on a certain occasion riding a Marchador, and covering fifty miles that day, and feeling no fatigue whatsoever on the next, although previously I had not been astride a horse for some six or seven years.

The Marchador is not common by any manner of means, and its gait or step is not taught, it is natural to the animal. There are some that will go at this pace for a time, and then break into a trot, which is not pleasant, for which reason I have heard some people say that they do not care for a Marchador, and I can quite understand their dislike in such a case; but a thorough or genuine Marchador that never changes his pace is most agreeable to ride—at least, for travelling long distances. In addition to the comfortable motion, I may state that the Marchador covers the ground quickly.

The use of the word canter has put me in mind of an amusing story I heard, years ago, concerning

one of my fellow-countrymen who wanted to hire a horse (this is often done in Brazil), and thinking the Portuguese word "*cantar*" (to sing) meant *canter*, asked the proprietor of the stables if he had a horse that could "*cantar*" (sing), to which the man, greatly astonished, replied: "No, but I have one that can *dançar* (dance)." This is merely an instance, by the way, of the ludicrous mistakes which occur by assuming that words similar in sound or spelling have the same meaning in different languages.

But, to return to our horses: much attention has been given lately, especially in the States of Rio Grande do Sul and São Paulo, to improving the breed, and English thoroughbreds and Arabian and Anglo-Norman horses have been introduced there for that purpose. Measures have also been adopted by the Government to stimulate efforts in behalf of the general improvement of the race.

It is only lately that the rearing of sheep has received attention, and some progress is being made in the States of Rio Grande do Sul and São Paulo, and in the first-named of these States a very good quality wool is produced.

In the vast regions of the central and southern uplands there are wide expanses of territory suitable to the rearing of this useful quadruped. A very lucrative industry, by the by. The Southdown breed is mostly preferred.

The total production of wool in the year 1900, in the State of Rio Grande do Sul was 2,161,472 kilogrammes, and in 1905 it amounted to 3,569,872 kilogrammes of the value of three thousand five

hundred contos of réis, which in English money would be £218,750, the equivalent of a conto of réis being about £62 10s.

In the north of Brazil the breeding of goats has been carried on for a long time past, and gives highly profitable returns, as these animals adapt themselves admirably to the conditions there, and thrive well in the States of Piauhý, Ceará and Rio Grande do Norte, and are able to withstand the droughts, to which these States are periodically subject, much better than any other kind of live stock.

In Piauhý there is an exceptionally fine breed of remarkable size, giving an abundant supply of milk.

A good trade is done in the export of the skins of these animals, both to Europe and to North America. In the year 1906 the State of Bahia, which also breeds them, exported skins to the value of £80,000. Ceará exported to the value of £140,000, and some of the other States collectively to the amount of £210,000, making a grand total of £430,000 out of the sale of the skins only, of a very hardy animal that requires next to no care or attention.

CHAPTER XX

The progress of Brazil—This is not due to the change in the régime, as some people claim—The country cannot help advancing—Protection carried to an extreme—This is ostensibly to protect national industries—These are sometimes fictitious, the term being a misnomer—Some manufactures which are prospering nevertheless—Need of population—Quantity of mineral wealth—Gold—Silver—Copper—Lead—Iron—Manganese—Mona-zile Sand—A curious method of prolonging the route of a railway—Explanation given to a friend of mine—The Government more careful in making contracts now—Brush with a “Delegado de Policia”—He is dismissed from his post—“Tribunal de Contas”—“Junta Commercial.”

DURING the last few years I have read several times of the great progress Brazil is making in the world, the writers clearly ascribing the development to the change in the régime, as if the advent of the Republic had benefited the country so much. I see no convincing proof of anything of the kind. In the early years it certainly brought disaster to the nation, as I have already pointed out, and whatsoever circumstances may be contributing to its advancement now could just as easily have come to pass had the country remained an Empire.

Rather than that the progress is due to the new administration, I think it might as reasonably be said that it progresses in spite of it, by which I mean that a country like Brazil is almost bound to advance,

although the government may not conduce to that end as much as it might.

Import duties are high, and in some cases quite prohibitive. I mention this fact again, at the risk of wearisome reiteration, as I feel it to be such a vital point as regards the future development of Brazil. These excessive import duties are professedly to protect national industries, but the benefit to the nation therefrom is, to say the least, very questionable, and may well be considered a negligible quantity, seeing that an advantage is conferred upon one, or a few, by sacrificing the many.

Some of these so-called national industries are of rather a fictitious kind. Match-making (I hasten to explain that I refer to the manufacture of matches) is considered or classified as a national industry, but the wood for making the matches is imported from Norway already cut into sheets. And there are some other equally anomalous national manufactures.

However, there are several that are prospering in a perfectly legitimate manner. Spinning and weaving, brewing, soap-making and many others.

Brazil, with its rich natural endowments, could well supply all its own wants. What it most stands in need of is people to help on the work of developing its boundless resources. There is room and to spare for all who may choose to try their fortunes there.

There is much of the country still unexplored, but the portions that are known contain Diamonds and



SCENE ON THE PARANA RAILWAY.

other precious stones, Gold, Platinum, Silver, Copper, Lead and Iron (this latter mineral in enormous quantities), Manganese and many other valuable minerals, besides great deposits of Monazite Sand used in the manufacture of gas-mantles.

With the opening up of so many railways “*de pénétration*” in Brazil, and the facilities that they will afford for locomotion and transport, much of the colossal wealth that now lies idle in the almost untrodden regions of this country will no doubt be brought within the sphere of industrial activity.

Talking of railways: in the past, to ensure the raising of the necessary capital for the construction of railways, it had been the custom of the Government to guarantee the interest on the amount employed, and this led, in some instances, to short lines being constructed whether really needed or not, merely for the sake of obtaining the interest on the capital laid out.

Some few years ago the Government determined to construct a line from the town of Santa Maria da Bocca do Monte (Saint Mary of the mouth of the hill), usually called Santa Maria, however, in the centre of the State of Rio Grande do Sul, to another town called Passo Fundo, which lies north-east of it. The ultimate object of this was to connect the existing railway, which crosses the State from east to west, with the railways of São Paulo, and so form an uninterrupted line of communication from Rio de Janeiro to Porto Alegre, the capital of the most southern State of the Republic, and also to the frontier.

The work was contracted for, the Government

undertaking to pay thirty contos (nearly £1,900) per kilometre.

There are places in the course of this railroad where to have advanced in a straight line would have necessitated a cutting, by no means a deep one, through a slight elevation of ground; but, instead of this, the rails were laid round the bases of these mounds, without the labour of making any cutting at all, thereby also increasing the distance (that is to say the lineal distance) in some instances by about 50 per cent., and as it approaches Passo Fundo in a distance which, I have been assured, might easily have been completed by six kilometres, the course taken is really ten kilometres. In passing over the line and looking from the carriage windows it is quite impossible to recognize any topographical cause for such a tortuous route. I have read of accidents which have happened by derailment, and stated in the papers of the day to be in consequence of these curves.

This is by no means an isolated instance (in railway making). I select this one as an example because I have travelled over the line and seen its unnecessarily circuitous route and am well assured of the accuracy of the facts, being really quite common knowledge.

On the Uruguayana railway there are, at places, unnecessary curves and a friend of mine, an engineer, commenting once upon some sinuosity on this line, met with this crushing reply: "Oh, it takes an engineer to make a curve."

The Government has of late, I believe, been more careful in making such contracts, introducing stipu-

lations as to the entire extent of the line to be constructed.

It was at Uruguayana, a city on the river Uruguay, from which it takes its name, that I had a quite unique experience that might have come out of an Opera Bouffe. The manner of its happening was thus—but I must preface my story by remarking that in the time of the Empire, of which I had more than twenty years' experience, polite and courteous behaviour generally, was certainly the rule, but after abolishing the court it seemed painfully apparent that some of the courtliness had been abolished too, and an amount of self-assertiveness made its appearance in its stead, amongst a certain class of individuals, which at times developed into presumption in the case of one or another in whom was vested a little authority.

On one of my journeys in the State of Rio Grande do Sul I arrived at Uruguayana. This was the first time I had been in the place, and in the evening I was sitting, as is a common custom there, outside the hotel where I was staying, talking to the proprietor, when presently a man, quite unknown to me, came and seated himself in a chair on the other side of mine host. Presently I heard the blowing of a police whistle, and it was repeated. Imagining there must be some disturbance, I said to the hotel proprietor, "O que ha?"—the English equivalent of which is: "What is the matter?"—to which he replied, "It is the police," and the new-comer observed, "What is that to do with you?" which I treated with the stony silence it deserved, remarking to the owner of the hotel that I knew it was the

police, but inquired the reason for it. Again this man said, "What is that to do with you?" to which I, without turning my head in his direction, responded, "Nothing." The hotel proprietor answered my question by saying, "That goes on all night," to which I merely answered one word, "Bobagem," which is more or less equivalent to "Tomfoolery."

At this moment the man who had obtruded himself on our conversation rose from the chair in which he had been sitting and called in a loud voice: "Police! Police!" but no one coming, he quickly walked away.

It now being past ten o'clock the owner and I went indoors, and he (the hotel proprietor) explained to me that this irascible individual was the "Delegado de policia" (Chief of Police) for that district, and that in the city the police had instructions to blow their whistles all through the night, at very brief intervals, to make sure that they were on their beat, and not asleep. Many of the townsfolk had already found this a decided nuisance.

I went to my room and to bed. Next morning, at about half-past six o'clock, I had just returned to my room from having my bath, and had only commenced to dress, when I heard a knocking at my door, which I opened a few inches, and, from my position behind it, looked round to see who it might be knocking at this early hour. To my surprise, I saw the man who had made himself so objectionable the evening before. He immediately said to me: "Está preso" (You are arrested, or, literally: You are a prisoner). "A prisoner,"

said I, "what for?" But he only repeated: "Está preso."

I remarked that I was not dressed, a fact of which he had ocular demonstration, but nevertheless he told me I was to go just as I was, to which I replied that I should do nothing of the kind, although I felt almost sorry at the time I could not bring myself to the point of walking through the streets in nothing more than my shirt and socks, so that the good people of the town might see what kind of a man they had for their "Delegado."

After dressing in the most leisurely manner I went out, and was escorted by two policemen, walking behind me, to the "Quartel,"¹ where I arrived at about seven o'clock.

A Spanish gentleman living in Uruguayana, who knew me very well, chanced to see me pass his house with the two policemen behind me, and he immediately made inquiry as to what had happened, and getting an account of the matter from the proprietor of the hotel, he and a Brazilian resident, who also knew me very well, went to the "Delegado" for the purpose of showing him what an unwarrantable excess of authority he had exercised, and at nine o'clock this personage came to the "Quartel" and told me I was free to leave.

When I returned to the hotel the owner informed me that the fellow had come back on the previous night bringing two policemen with him to take me then, but he, the hotel proprietor, had refused to

¹ Quartel means Barracks. This rather unsuitable word has lately been altered to "Chefatura."

give him the number of my room, and as he could not very well go round to all the rooms in order to find out where I was, he had to wait until the morning. The police were stationed outside the house, front and back, all night, that I might not escape. All the time I was peacefully asleep, not even dreaming of the warlike operations that were going on outside.

The "Delegado's" attempt to take me when he returned to the hotel that night was a direct violation of the law of the land which declares a citizen's domicile to be inviolable after sunset. The hotel was my domicile for the time being.

Very soon after this little episode the man was dismissed from his post, for he had made himself very obnoxious. And the frequent blowing of whistles ceased also.

I was asked afterwards by two or three of my Brazilian friends why I did not seek the British Consul to demand satisfaction through him, but I replied that I considered the whole matter too utterly stupid and contemptible to trouble the Consul of my nation about it.

* * * * *

I have sometimes been asked to explain the functions of the "Tribunal de Contas" (Tribunal of Accounts). This institution was founded in 1892, and its chief function is to study, and, in fact, draw up all contracts signed by the Federal Government. All payments under such contracts must be authorized by this Tribunal, and all laws of a financial nature decreed by Congress, whether for Budget purposes or otherwise, must be registered at the

offices of this Tribunal, which alone can authorize the respective payments under such law.

The "Junta Commercial" is another institution of great interest to those who may have business relations with Brazil.

All commercial houses must be duly registered at the "Junta Commercial" according to law, though many nevertheless are not. The law also requires each commercial house of whatsoever nature to have a "Diario" (Journal) and a "Copiador" (General Letter-book) rubricated by the "Junta Commercial." In case of a law-suit a Journal or General Letter-book not rubricated would have no legal value. The charges for rubricating vary, but the "sello de verba" (stamp duty) is 44 réis per folio, though this charge varies according to the size of the folio—if over 33×22 cm. the charge is double, i.e. 88 réis, in which case a large General Letter-book of about 1,000 folios will cost about 100 milréis, more or less, which in English coin is a little over six pounds sterling.

CHAPTER XXI

Some characteristics in Brazil similar to those noticed by Mrs. Alec Tweedie in Mexico—Names given to shops—Bedrooms furnished more for appearance than for comfort—National custom on the occasion of a wedding—Strange to English ideas—English customs equally strange to the people of Brazil—Marriages—Civil ceremony now compulsory—"Padrinhos" and "Madrinhas" instead of Best Man and Bridesmaids—A "Padrinho" or "Madrinha" requires a special Dispensation to marry the person for whom he or she has stood sponsor in the event of remarriage—Case of a lady being "Madrinha" at her sister's wedding and afterwards marrying the bridegroom herself, at her sister's decease—Divorce—Story of a Notary Public who married about fifty couples before Civil Marriage had become law—Brazilian drawing-rooms—A first call—People very friendly when better acquainted—Their excitable temperament—Children allowed to sit up late—Neighbours generally pleasant—Kindness in case of sickness—Baptismal names—Classic, historic and so on—Espírito Santo.

MRS. ALEC TWEEDIE, in her charming book on Mexico,¹ describes some characteristics of the country she visited which might have been drawn from Brazil. For instance: the curious custom of giving names to shops, which is almost universal all over the country. To give a few examples: the two leading drapers and haberdashers in the Rua do Ouvidor in Rio de Janeiro are called respectively the "Notre Dame" and the

¹ *Mexico as I saw it.* Mrs. Alec Tweedie.

"Palais Royal." A glover's is generally named "A Luva de Ouro" (The Golden Glove), or a boot or shoe maker's as "A Bota de Ouro" (The Golden Boot). In Porto Alegre, where we lived for many years, most of the shops had names. There was "O Preço Fixo," a kind of high-class bazaar. Incidentally, I may remark that this identical shop was one of the pioneers of the movement among retail merchants for establishing fixed prices for the articles they offered for sale. Up to quite recent times the habit of bargaining and haggling was so universal that it was always taken for granted that the price asked by the seller was much more than he expected to receive ultimately from the buyer, and the purchase of so many yards (or metres¹) of stuff for a gown used to be the occasion for quite an exciting contest of wits between the shopman and the lady making the purchase.

"A Economia Domestica" (Domestic Economy) was the very appropriate name of a general grocer's store, and amongst the smaller shops, to give one or two more examples, was one called "Eden Familiar," which must *not* be translated Familiar Eden. The adjective "familiar" in Portuguese has not the offensive meaning it sometimes has in English, but means simply appertaining to the family, so that we may take it that this was meant to be a kind of Garden of Eden for those families who would patronize it with their custom. I remember another shop (in Pelotas, I think) called "O Paraíso das Damas" (The Ladies' Paradise). I must not forget to

¹ It used to be "Covados" before the Metric System was introduced.

mention one very quaint name : "O SOL NASCE PARA TODOS," which being translated means that the sun rises for all. Perhaps it is only fair to mention here that this is a very common saying, akin to a proverb indeed, so the owner of the shop, a very small draper and haberdasher, probably gave it as a name to his ambitious little establishment by way of signifying to all and sundry that the sun would shine on his enterprise just as much as on that of bigger merchants.

The little red flag Mrs. Tweedie mentions outside the butchers' shops is also a very familiar sight to those who have lived in Brazil. There, however, the flag is always accompanied by a small notice-board bearing the words "Carne verde," literally green meat. They never speak of meat as being fresh, but green, in contra-distinction to dried or salt beef.

In like manner the very hard pillows and very short and narrow bed-linen which caused Mrs. Tweedie so much discomfort in Mexico are painfully well known to those who have had much experience of hotels in Brazil, and more particularly of the small country-inns, or, as they are called in the camp, "Pousadas."

And neither are these characteristics limited to the hotels and inns : in private houses it is the same. In fact, I am not over-stating the case when I say that Brazilian bedrooms are furnished and fitted for appearance and not for comfort. The bedroom is the room on which all the artistic efforts of the lady of the house are concentrated : it possesses the costliest furniture, the toilet service is of

the finest porcelain, crystal, or silver, according to the means and the taste of the owner, a rich silk or damask counterpane covers the bed, exquisite lace or embroidery covers the pillows and adorns the part of the sheet that turns over it ; but under all this luxury and splendour lies a pillow as hard as Jacob's, and the serviceable portion of the sheet (sometimes the ornamented portion is detachable and comes off at night) is so short and narrow that when there are two mattresses or palliasses on the bed, the under sheet will not reach down and cover the lower mattress. The chief bedroom being, so to speak, the *chef d'œuvre* of the house, occupies very conspicuous place in it. If the house be a double-fronted one, the bedroom will be opposite the drawing-room on the other side of the hall ; in a single-fronted house it is immediately off the drawing-room, and the door of communication between the two is always left wide open, so that, not only visitors, but casual passers-by can see through into it. I have known houses where there is a second much more simply fitted bedroom behind the principal one, and this is very often the one that is really in use.

On the occasion of a wedding the preparation of the bridal chamber is a great feature, and the manner in which this is exhibited to all the guests at the wedding ceremony is, to say the least, surprising to new-comers. The newly-married couple sit on the sofa in the drawing-room in state, and the ladies all go in and look at the bride's room. Nor is this interesting apartment hidden from indiscreet masculine gaze, for the doors—they are

always folding-doors in Brazil—are thrown wide open so that all may see it who like.

But, “*Puris omnia sunt pura*,” so let no English reader form a mistaken idea of the Brazilian bride on this account. And to those English ladies who are perhaps horrified (or amused, as the case may be) at what is an old-fashioned custom in Brazil, I would merely remark that it is the Brazilian ladies’ turn to be astonished and even scandalized when they learn that their English sisters not only go out alone with the men to whom they are engaged to be married, but are even kissed by them. This, to the Brazilian mind, is the height of impropriety. Oh, horror !

After all, “*Autres pays, autres mœurs*,” and who knows but what people do well to keep to the customs of their own country, and not copy those of others ? A French lady who writes under the name of Pierre de Coulevain¹ makes her hero, in a delightful book called *Sur la Branche*, say that when the lady of his heart accepted his offer of marriage he felt he would like to kiss her in the English way, but force of habit, or tradition, proved too strong for him and, instead, he lifted his hat to her who was going to be his wife. Perhaps that is also the attitude of the best type of Brazilian towards his “*Noiva*.”²

This is, I think, a suitable moment to stop and glance at Brazilian marriage laws.

¹ Since writing the above I have learned of the death of Mlle. Favre, as her real name was.

² *Noivo* ” and the corresponding feminine form “*noiva* ” mean respectively bridegroom and bride. A girl is often spoken of as a “*Noiva* ” from the time she is engaged to be married,

One of the early acts of the Republican Government was the making of the Civil Marriage Law, with a view to making marriage a purely civil contract, and this form is the only one possessing legal value.

But, although the State takes no cognisance of the religious ceremony, this rite is generally adhered to still. The desire for this emanates mostly, I think, from the bride and her womenfolk, for the women are undoubtedly the great upholders of the Church in all the rites and ceremonies appertaining thereto. In the case of marriages it is possible that a little pardonable vanity may influence the bride in wishing to make the most of this one great event in her life, although I believe many of them, whether it be from pure sentiment, or from religious conviction, prefer, and attach more importance within themselves to, the religious ceremony with its Benediction, than to the one which the law of the land requires that they shall go through.

The evening is the time generally chosen for a wedding.¹ It is not the custom for the bride to have bridesmaids, nor for the bridegroom to have a best man, but they both have what are called "Padrinhos" and "Madrinhas," which translated means Godfathers and Godmothers. These are generally married friends of either family, although it may sometimes happen that the padrinho and madrinha of either the bride or the bridegroom are

¹ The civil ceremony sometimes takes place the day before, or on the morning of the same day. In some cases one rite succeeds the other immediately.

not husband and wife. In the event of a padrinho and madrinha being candidates for matrimony, or should the bridegroom become a widower and afterwards wish to marry either of the ladies who officiated at his former wedding, a special licence is required before the religious ceremony can be performed, although no tie of consanguinity may exist between them.

Of this I once had an example, as I was well acquainted not only with both the prospective bride and bridegroom, but also the priest who officiated at their marriage.

The gentleman, an officer in the Brazilian Navy, became a widower, and, some time after, wished to marry his sister-in-law, for which purpose he had to get a Dispensation. Just on the eve of the wedding the priest who was going to marry them discovered, casually in conversation, that the lady had acted as madrinha at her sister's wedding, and for this reason another Dispensation was required. This was told to me by the priest himself.

These restrictions have reference only to the religious rite, which can be entirely dispensed with, if so desired.

Divorce is not sanctioned by the law of the land, although it has been debated two or three times in Congress since the advent of the Republic, but it has hitherto met with strong opposition. Of course married people can separate if they choose to do so, and the law admits of what is called "Separação de bens," which signifies a judicial separation of property, and, from a financial point of view, but only so, is divorce recognized.

Speaking of civil marriage recalls to my mind a great scandal which was denounced in the year 1883 by a foreigner then living in Brazil. The gentleman I refer to discovered that a certain Notary Public in the city of Rio Grande do Sul had been, for some time past, marrying (?) couples—foreigners, colonists, mostly of German origin—who were Protestants. As they could not be married in the Established Church this obliging Notary helped them out of their difficulty by enacting what he called a civil marriage, although then, in the time of the Empire, the law countenanced no such rite.

This was verified. He had carried out this fraud in about fifty cases, prevailing upon the credulity of these various couples and their immediate friends, and recovering from them in each case more or less fifty milréis, a sum equivalent, at that time, to about £5.

The gentleman who brought this abuse to light laid information concerning it before the President of the Province, as it was called then, Dr. Henrique d'Avila, whom I had the pleasure of knowing for many years.

Inquiry was made, and the reply was that the said Notary Public had done all he had been accused of doing, but that he had acted in "boa fé" (good faith!).

Information was also sent to the German Minister in Rio de Janeiro, who urged upon the Government the need for passing an Act legitimizing the children of these couples who had been deceived owing to their ignorance of the law of the land in which they were living. In this the Minister was unsuccessful,

no Act was passed, and the only punishment meted out to the Notary was that he was dismissed from his office. As a matter of fact, he died shortly afterwards.

To return to Brazilian houses: the drawing-room also merits description, and, as they are all modelled on the same pattern, this will not take long.

Against the principal wall, generally facing the door, is the sofa; on each side of it, at right angles, is an armchair; next to these armchairs are one or two small chairs, also facing each other in stiff array—if the drawing-room be a large one, there may be a rocking-chair at the end of the row of chairs. The other chairs, all of which are alike, for a drawing-room suite always consists of a sofa, two, or sometimes four, armchairs, and a dozen or half a dozen small chairs, a pair of marble consoles, or “Dunquerques” as they are called there, and sometimes one or two rocking-chairs. The other chairs then, as I was going to say, are arranged along the walls of the room, and two are always placed in each window. Sitting at the window in the afternoon is a great feature in the southern States—it is not done so much in the north. In a great many drawing-rooms (“Salas”) there is often a long, flat sort of padded strip, or cushion, embroidered on satin or velvet, or worked in cross-stitch, to lay on the window-sill to rest the elbows on and lean over. The window-sills are, of course, much higher than they are here—about the height to lean upon comfortably. The only carpet the drawing-room contains is a kind of rug which lies before the sofa, covering the alley of chairs, or sort

of royal road that leads up to the place of honour on the sofa. Of wall decoration there is almost none—a mirror or two in a gilt frame, and in some few houses a family portrait, perhaps, but that is all.

The quality of the furniture, of course, varies according to the means of the family, but the style and the method of arranging it are invariably the same. There seems, in fact, to be some kind of unwritten law governing the arrangement of the drawing-room, which no self-respecting Brazilian family would think of violating.

Needless to say this refers to the real Brazilian, or Lusitano-Brazilian homes. The foreigners who have made their home there naturally arrange their houses according to the style of their respective countries.

A first call, or “*Visita de cerimonia*” (Ceremonial visit), is rather a painful ordeal: one sits stiffly on the sofa, or on one of the prim-looking chairs (the reader will have gathered that in a Brazilian drawing-room there are no chairs of the kind that we call comfortable), to be solemnly looked at, and all one’s efforts at conversation are met by monosyllables accompanied by a grave bend of the head. Any light subject would be regarded as undignified and frivolous on such an occasion. On better acquaintance, however, this attitude drops off them like a cloak, and a very pleasant, kindly nature stands revealed. As soon as they are on a footing of what they call “*Franquesa*,” or intimacy, they become exceedingly friendly and chatty. They all talk much faster¹ and their voices are pitched in

¹ Particularly in the south. In the north the voices are usually very drawling.

a higher key than is usual in Europe. This latter quality, I mean the high-pitched voice, is the effect, I think, of nervous excitability.

Brazilians have generally an excitable temperament, due, one cannot help thinking, to the fact that they do not have enough sleep in their childhood. I should like to lay special stress on this point, as it is quite pitiable, from the English point of view, to see the way in which children are allowed to sit up with their elders until late in the evening. The little semi-religious rite of "putting the children to bed" is quite unknown there. The poor mites just sit, or lie, about on sofas, sometimes sleeping in snatches, sometimes joining unexpectedly in the conversation which is naturally not maintained at the level of a child's mind, and the result is that they all grow up with their nerves more or less jangled, and when anything occurs to disturb or excite them a harsh, strident note takes the place of their calm, pleasant voices.

It is with kindly recollection that I mention that, as a rule, they make pleasant neighbours. In fact, when one is moving into a new house it is not at all uncommon for the people next door, or across the road, or even a few houses down the road, to send and inquire whether they can do anything to help. And if there is sickness in the house they will come round every day, not only to inquire after the invalid, but to help in the nursing.

In the selection of baptismal names, especially for boys, one notices a decided partiality for classic or historical names. One may have an Alcibiades for one's next door neighbour, Socrates may perhaps

live across the road, and Achilles or Epaminondas round the corner. Hannibal and Julius¹ Cæsar may pursue quite peaceful avocations, and Diogenes may be quite friendly and pleasant—perhaps in Brazil he might even be grateful to any one who came between him and the sun, seeing that its rays are considerably stronger than they could ever have been in Ancient Greece.

They are also fond of giving surnames of men of note, such as Nelson, Newton, Washington, Lafayette and so on; also Biblical names, and in one city there is a well-known public functionary who rejoices in the names of Melchisedech, Mathusalem (Methuselah) —— !

One often finds the names of Joseph and Mary in conjunction, thus: José Maria for a boy, and Maria José for a girl. The name João de Deus (John of God) is very common, and Antonio de Jesus and Maria de Jesus are by no means uncommon.

Children generally take their mother's surname as well as their father's, so that it is quite common there to have a double surname. For instance, if the mother's patronymic is de Castro, and the father's Sampaio, the children will probably, though not necessarily be: de Castro Sampaio. I have known people with four surnames, viz., da Silva Frões de Castro Menezes.

A great many names of Portuguese origin take "de" or "da" and sometimes "dos" before them.

¹ Julio Cesar in Portuguese. The Latin *us* being rendered by *o*, and the diphthong *æ* by *e*.

In the case of two names, each with a " de " or " da " before it, the second particle is sometimes changed to " e " (and), as for example : de Souza e Freitas, instead of de Souza de Freitas. The particle has not the same social significance there that it has in France, and is never used in speaking to any one. For instance, one never says : Sr. *de* Oliveira, in speaking to any one of that name, but merely Sr. Oliveira, and so on.

The hyphen, too, is quite unknown out there as a link between two surnames. This is a little vanity they sometimes adopt when they come over here.

The few names given by no means exhaust the list, but I will mention in conclusion that one of the States is called Espirito Santo, which in English—one almost hesitates to write it—is Holy Ghost.

CHAPTER XXII

All Souls' Day—How it is kept there—Law regarding burial of the dead within twenty-four hours—Interment always takes place expeditiously—Everything in this respect very different from English usages—Deceased person not wrapped in a shroud—But is dressed—Sometimes in ordinary costume—Sometimes in a special way—Young unmarried women dressed as brides—Some ladies after the style of their Patron Saints—The "camara ardente"—The "Velorio" or vigil—The bier is carried to the church by friends of the family—Sometimes it is carried all the way to the burial-ground—Near relatives do not attend a funeral—Until recently children's coffins used to be carried open—Coffins black, purple, white or coloured according to sex and age—Story of mock "Velorio" got up to frighten a "Gaúcho"—Result—The carrying of weapons—A shot is fired into our dining-room—A human arsenal—Real estate or otherwise equally divided amongst the children—Division of property of married people.

ONE of the customs of this country that I should like to make particular mention of—and one that is, I believe, common to all Catholic countries—is the observance of the day dedicated in the calendar to All Souls, namely, the 2nd November. For the first few years, though living in the country, I remained, like, I suppose, most of my fellow-countrymen, oblivious, so to speak, of what was taking place around me, but, in course of time, having lost, in this world, some who were dear to me, this brought me into sympathy with the custom of consecrating one day every year to their memory. This must not be understood to be a day of public

mourning, but rather a day of kindly and loving remembrance. From the early morning until even-tide people are continually coming and going, visiting the cemeteries, bringing wreaths and flowers to lay on the last resting-place of those who at one time lived in their midst, all bent on the same errand, all, for the time being, united in a common bond of sympathy.

It is in my mind that we, of this nation, might well observe the day in a similar manner. The feeling that would prompt it must surely be in the minds of many, but custom does not sanction it, so it is not done.

When a death occurs, the law requires that interment shall take place within twenty-four hours, and I have often known of cases where it has been done in less time, when, for instance, any one has died in the early hours of the morning. This, in point of fact, is the one function that is carried through in the most expeditious manner. Sometimes, indeed, it is done so expeditiously that one does not hear of it in time to attend the funeral.

The whole accompaniment of death is so different that a slight description may be of interest to the English reader.

The deceased person is not wrapped in a shroud,¹ but is dressed in the ordinary way, even to boots or shoes, in their "Sunday best" of course, if one may use the expression with due reverence.

If the deceased be a young unmarried lady, she is

¹ Yet this must have been the custom with the Portuguese, as they still preserve the word "mortalha," which has the same meaning as the English word "shroud."

generally dressed in bridal costume, or should she be married but still quite young she will probably be dressed in the garb of her patron saint. People very often leave very definite instructions as to how they wish to be attired.

Young children are dressed as angels, and are always spoken of as "aninhos" (little angels).

The body having been dressed, is next laid on a long table suitably draped, and long tapers are placed at the head and feet—four in all—which remain alight from the moment of laying out the corpse until it is borne away. This constitutes the "camara ardente."

On this occasion it is the custom for friends to assemble at the house to take part in the vigil, which lasts through the night, and is known there as the "Velorio"—from "Vela," a candle.

Friends are never wanting to perform this last tribute to the memory of the departed, and to condole with the relatives in their bereavement.

It is also very usual for the bier to be carried at least to the church by the friends of the deceased, and sometimes there are so many who desire to show their regard for the family in this way that the coffin, which is always provided with rings, or handles, for this purpose, is often carried all the way. A serving-man sometimes accompanies the funeral cortège carrying trestles to rest the coffin on when a change of bearers is made. Sometimes the trestles are carried by the hearse which follows immediately behind, but is very often not made use of any more than that, unless the distance happens to be very great.

It is not the custom for the nearest relative of the deceased to attend the funeral, I mean, for instance, a husband or a son ; neither do ladies ever accompany a funeral procession.

Until comparatively recently it was the custom to carry the coffin containing the remains of a young child open, only closing it at the grave side.

The coffins there are made of satin or velvet, or brocade with gold or silver bands. Black for a man ; purple for a lady—a dark shade of purple if she is advanced in years, and a lighter shade if she is young ; white for a young unmarried lady and for children. One sometimes sees coloured coffins for children.

The lid of the coffin is always double, opening down the middle and hinged at the sides. It fastens with a padlock, and the key is brought home to the family after the funeral.

I remember hearing a story, many years ago, of a practical joke that was played on a “Gaúcho” to try and frighten him. A sham “Velorio” was got up at a country house. A coffin was procured and a young man lay in it with lighted tapers around him in the orthodox manner. During the evening the neighbours, for whose benefit this trick was planned, came in to take part in the customary vigil. By and by the other watchers, who were all in the secret, left the room one by one, the Gaúcho being presently left alone with the supposed corpse, which now gradually rose to a sitting posture.

The solitary watcher, whom it was intended to frighten, sprang out of his chair, exclaiming : “ Oh,

diabo ! ” which I need hardly explain is an ejaculation referring to his Satanic Majesty, and plunged his knife into him.

Fortunately for the joker he was not reduced to the condition he had just been feigning, although he had a narrow escape.

The carrying of knives in the country, that is, in the cattle-rearing estates, is a universal custom, and one can understand that they are handy things to have about one. But in the towns there is not the same need for them, yet they are often carried just the same. They are worn either in the waistband of the trousers at the back, or attached to the waistcoat, or perhaps inside the coat on the left side.

The embellishing of these knives affords the working silversmiths, who are to be found in any country town, however small, an excellent opportunity for displaying their art in the chasing of the hafts and sheaths. I have seen many very handsomely wrought with the additional adornment of gold bands on the silver.

These knives may cost anything from £6 or £7 even to £20 sometimes, and some owners evince much pride in the possession thereof.

In the towns, however, I think a revolver is carried more frequently than a knife. It is quite a common practice to carry arms, and one that is much to be deplored, as it affords a far too ready means of settling disputes in what is only too often a tragic way.

I should not care for it to be inferred from the foregoing that there is any need to go about armed in this way—I do not think there is. I never

adopted the custom, and never experienced the need to do so.

In connexion with the use or misuse of firearms, I should like to relate a little incident that happened in my family some years ago.

My wife was sitting at table with the children in our dining-room one day, when suddenly a bullet sped through the room across the whole length of the table, fortunately hitting a biscuit-box which she had in her hand at the moment, scattering its contents and glancing off again on to the floor.

Upon my going round to my neighbour to complain, he, without offering a word of apology, said : "Oh, yes ! I am going a journey, and was trying my revolver."

I merely mention this as an instance of very culpable carelessness in the use of firearms. My neighbour's attitude must not be taken as typical of Brazilian manners.

Some of the young men out there—I am speaking of the camp and camp towns—seem imbued with the idea that to be armed indicates a spirit of bravery. I call to mind a man I met on one occasion who carried a gun strapped across his shoulders, a sword at his side, a knife, a double-barrelled pistol and a revolver in his waistbelt—a human arsenal, in fact ; and I well remember the satisfied air with which he displayed all these weapons, as if they were a proof of exceeding valour.

* * * *

The law of primogeniture does not exist in Brazil. All estate real or otherwise is equally divided amongst the children, but there is a law relating to the pro-

perty of married people which I think anything but just. I cannot do better than illustrate it by narrating a case, the parties in which I knew very well. A young lady, possessed of a very moderate fortune, just sufficient for her to live on, married the son of a tradesman who was in his father's employ. In about six months after the marriage the husband died, leaving no issue, and his father, as heir, claimed half of the wife's fortune, as the law allowed him to do. The husband in this case proved a very transitory and expensive possession. But such is the law.

CHAPTER XXIII

The Portuguese language—Difference in manner of speaking of Lusitanians and Brazilians—Influence of Spanish on the frontier—Brazilians have inherited literary tastes from their Portuguese progenitors—Some Brazilians poets—Castro Alves—Gonçalves Dias—Strange manner in which the poet's prayer was fulfilled—José de Alencar—His principal romances—*O Guarany*—*Iracema*—*Cinco Minutos*—Tobias Barreto—José Bonifacio de Andrada.

THE country having been originally colonized by Portugal, the language spoken, needless to say, is Portuguese, but there is a noticeable difference between the Portuguese language as spoken by the Lusitanians themselves and as spoken by their Brazilian descendants, even as between the English language as spoken by British people and as it is spoken by Americans. The Portuguese make their consonants more crisp and clip their words, that is to say, the short syllables, something after the French fashion, whereas the Brazilians give them a more drawn-out sound, especially in the north. In the south we hear the more crisp pronunciation again, but unaccompanied by the velvety tones of the cultured Portuguese.

On the frontier of the Spanish republics—for Brazil touches all the other countries of South America, excepting Ecuador and Chili—some

Spanish expressions are commonly in use, and have consequently become almost incorporated into the language.

With the language the Brazilians have inherited from their Portuguese progenitors the rich literary heritage that is one of the priceless gifts of the mother-country, and the children of the people who produced Camões, Almeida Garrett, Thomas Ribeiro, Alexandre Herculano and countless others have likewise already produced poets and prose writers of no mean order. Gonçalves Dias was a lyric poet of imagination and feeling. Casimiro de Abreu and Fagundes Varella will always have a place of honour wherever the Portuguese language is read and understood, although the former died too young to fulfil the promise contained in his work. Castro Alves, perhaps the most widely read of Brazilian poets, had moments when he touched the sublime, as, for instance, in his *Navio Negreiro* (The Slave-ship), where he has these lines :—

O, mar, porque não apagas,
Co'a esponja de tuas vagas
De teu manto este borrão ?
Astros, noites, tempestades,
Rolai das immensidades,
Varrei os mares, tufão !

of which the following will serve to give some idea :—

With the sponge of thy waves,
The dark stain of the slaves
From thy face thou should'st purge,
Sweep down from the heights,
Oh, stars, winds and nights,
And cleanse the wide seas of this scourge !

In the same poem he has this rather apt definition of the Englishman :—

O Inglez, marinheiro frio,
Que ao nascer no mar se achou,
Pois a Inglaterra é um navio
Que Deus na Mancha anchorou.

which may be rendered as follows :—

The Englishman, a mariner cold,
From his birth a sailor to be,
For England's but a vessel bold,
Anchored by God in the Northern Sea.

I put Gonçalves Dias first on the list because I think I may say he is the best beloved of Brazil's poets, for it was while he was in Portugal where—like Casimiro de Abreu and other young Brazilians of their day—he had been sent to the University of Coimbra, that he wrote his most popular, although not his best poem, *Minha Terra* (My Land), in which he gave utterance to the prayer that he might not be permitted to die without again seeing his native land :—

Sem qu'inda aviste as palmeiras,
Onde canta o sabiá.

Without at least a sight of the palm-trees
Whereon the sabiá sings.

This prayer was granted literally, for it was vouchsafed to him to see the land of his birth once more, but not to tread its shores before he died. He was returning from Portugal to Maranhão, his

native province, and the ship was wrecked in sight of the capital, São Luiz, and went down with him and all on board, at six o'clock in the morning.

I give here an English translation of *Minha Terra* by Daniel Fox, which I have taken from Lady Burton's book, *The Life of Capt. Sir Richard F. Burton* :—

My native land's the land of Palms,
The sabiá sings there,
In this dread land no song-bird's notes
With our sweet birds compare.

More radiant stars bestrew our skies,
More flowers bedeck our fields,
A fuller life teems in our woods,
More love our Home-life yields.

My wakeful thoughts—alone—at night
Full of sweet memories are,
Of mine own land, the land of Palms,
Where sings the sabiá.

My land has sweetest fruits and flowers,
Such sweets I find not here.
Alone—at night—in wakeful hours
More pleasures find I there,
Mine own dear land, the land of Palms,
Where sings the sabiá.

God, in His mercy, grant I may
To that dear land return,
Ere the sweet flowers and fruits decay,
Which here, alas ! I mourn ;
That once again, before I die,
I may the Palm-Trees see,
And hear again the sabiá
Sing its sweet melody.

José de Alencar, a naval officer by profession, was

a prose writer of style and finish. Foremost amongst the works which flowed from his pen are *O Guarany* and *Iracema*. The first-named was used by Carlos Gomes as the theme of his Opera *Il Guarany*. The Guarany is a young Indian warrior, Pery by name, who first wins the admiration of Dona Cecilia de Mariz, or Cecy, as she is called, the daughter of Don Antonio de Mariz, a great and powerful Portuguese nobleman, by bringing her a live *onça* or jaguar, because he had heard her express a wish to see one, and succeeds gradually in awakening a feeling in her deeper than admiration. The other suitors to Cecy's hand, if one may use the expression, seeing that Pery never aspired to the honour of suing for her hand, but was content to be a humble adorer, were Loredano, an Italian adventurer, and Alvaro de Sá, a young Portuguese *Fidalgo*. Pery saves Cecy's life several times when it is menaced by the dangers that beset the Portuguese settlers only too frequently in those early days, and she is finally committed to his care by her father when the house is attacked first by a band of adventurers headed by Loredano and then by a tribe of Indians, the Aymorés, in revenge for the death of an Indian woman at the hands of Don Diogo de Mariz, Cecy's brother. The old *fidalgo* administers baptism to the young Indian and confides his daughter to his care, making him promise that she shall not fall alive into the hands of the foe, and then when Pery has carried her away, he fires the powder magazine in the cellar of the house, and perishes with his assailants, Don Alvaro de Sá being already dead. Cecy and her rescuer are next threatened with danger

by flood, for a mighty torrent is coming sweeping over the plains carrying everything before it. Pery performs his last exploit : with herculean strength, he uproots a tall palm-tree after three attempts, proposing to float away to safety on it with Cecy. The girl refuses, however, and together they await the rush of the on-coming waters. The passage in which Cecy makes Pery understand that she returns his love is written with delicacy and restraint.

Iracema, which has been translated into English by Sir Richard Burton, treats of the converse situation, an Indian maiden, Iracema, or Honey-lips, and a white warrior. Iracema is the daughter of Araken, an Indian chief, and of her it has been prophesied that if she shall love a white man she shall die. How this prophecy is fulfilled is shown in the course of the story, which though less polished than *O Guarany* is written with more force and carries with it a more convincing quality.

In *Cinco Minutos* (Five Minutes) the author is in quite another vein, and tells how he hates punctuality, which he stigmatizes as "a bad habit of the English," and how, being just five minutes late for the omnibus, that started at six o'clock from Andarahy, he had to wait until seven o'clock and was rewarded by an adventure which he describes in his most charming style.

Tobias Barreto was both a poet and a prose-writer of note, but was perhaps at his best in essay writing.

José Bonifacio de Andrada, the tutor of the late Emperor, was a poet as well as a statesman, and there are many more whose names ought to figure

in a list of Brazilian writers of merit, but I regret that at this distance of time and place I cannot give more than a very fragmentary account of either the authors or the literature of the country.

CHAPTER XXIV

Lotteries—Very frequent—Another mode of gambling deduced therefrom—*Jogo do Bicho*—A unique case of ultra-scrupulousness on the part of a seller of lottery-tickets—Clever manœuvre practised on a rich man to obtain the hand of his daughter in marriage—Politics—Political feeling affects entire families—Is manifest even to the grave sometimes—Great inclination for public speaking and fluency therein—A grave-side oration—Startling effect on the hearers—The Press—Newspapers common all over the country—Well written articles to be found in the better class ones—Heated discussions carried on sometimes—National mode of dealing with the office of a paper which has given offence—Names of some of the leading papers in Rio de Janeiro—A few of the humorous ones.

NO mention of Brazil would be complete without reference to the lotteries which seem to be the one all-pervading interest of all—rich and poor, young and old, high and low. In Rio de Janeiro alone there is one lottery drawn daily, and nearly all, if not all, the States have lotteries of their own, which run more or less frequently. In Rio Grande do Sul there is one which is drawn regularly once a week, not to mention foreign lotteries, the tickets of which are sold privately, their sale being illegal.

In connexion with the lotteries there is yet another great gambling scheme called the "*Jogo do Bicho*," which is played in the following manner : there are

twenty-five "Bichos,"¹ and to each one there correspond four sets of two terminal figures of the numbers (which run into thousands) of the lottery tickets. Any one choosing a "Bicho" which happens to bear the four terminals corresponding to the last figures of the number drawn for the big prize in the lottery wins twenty times the amount of his stake. Should one confine one's self to one termination, i.e. unit and ten, then the amount won is seventy times that of the original stake; or, should one select three figures, namely, unit, ten and hundred, and should they happen to correspond to the last three figures of the lottery-ticket winning the great prize, then one would win five hundred times the amount staked.

The following table will serve to show the principle on which this is done :—

	New Style,				Old Style.			
Tigre (tiger)	.	.	.	01 26 51 76	01	02	03	04
Perú (turkey)	.	.	.	02 27 52 77	05	06	07	08
Cão (hound)	.	.	.	03 28 53 78	09	10	11	12
Avestruz (ostrich)	.	.	.	04 29 54 79	13	14	15	16
Cervo (stag)	.	.	.	05 30 55 80	17	18	19	20
Boi (ox)	.	.	.	06 31 56 81	21	22	23	24
Veado (deer)	.	.	.	07 32 57 82	25	26	27	28
Cavallo (horse)	.	.	.	08 33 58 83	29	30	31	32
Gato (cat)	.	.	.	09 34 59 84	33	34	35	36
Ovelha (sheep)	.	.	.	10 35 60 85	37	38	39	40
Rato (rat)	.	.	.	11 36 61 86	41	42	43	44
Camello (camel)	.	.	.	12 37 62 87	45	46	47	48
Porco (pig)	.	.	.	13 38 63 88	49	50	51	52
Burro (donkey)	.	.	.	14 39 64 89	53	54	55	56
Coelho (rabbit)	.	.	.	15 40 65 90	57	58	59	60
Macaco (monkey).	.	.	.	16 41 66 91	61	62	63	64
Tatú (armadillo)	.	.	.	17 42 67 92	65	66	67	68

¹ "Bicho" means any kind of bird, beast or fish.

	New Style.	Old Style.
Leão (lion)	18 43 68 93	69 70 71 72
Pomba (dove)	19 44 69 94	73 74 75 76
Elephante (elephant)	20 45 70 95	77 78 79 80
Girafa (giraffe)	21 46 71 97	81 82 83 84
Urso (bear)	22 47 72 97	85 86 87 88
Cabrito (goat)	23 48 73 98	89 90 91 92
Gallo (cock)	24 49 74 99	93 94 95 96
Agua (eagle)	25 50 75 00	97 98 99 00

There is yet another arrangement of the figures, but I do not quite recollect, at the present moment, how they go. The foregoing will serve to give an idea, however, of the manner in which the game is played.

Need it be said, that, for the few who are fortunate enough to win prizes, there are hundreds who lose their money in this way? And I have heard it remarked more than once, that of these who do win prizes in the lotteries (or their off-shoot, the bicho), very few seem to keep their winnings very long: they seem to vanish as quickly as they came, perhaps on the principle of "Lightly come, lightly go."

Whilst on the subject of lotteries, I should like to relate an incident of which I have personal knowledge, as it was told to me by the party concerned in it. One morning an old Italian lottery-ticket vendor (they are generally Italians) came to a neighbour of ours and offered him a lottery-ticket.

"I don't want it," said my friend. "I have no money this morning."

"No matter," replied the old Italian, who had often sold him tickets before, "I will keep this one for you," pointing to a particular number.

The lottery was drawn that very day, and the

old man returned in the evening to my friend to inform him that the ticket had won the prize and again tendered it to him. This proved to be quite correct, the prize in this instance being equivalent to £700 in English currency. This is an example of ultra-scrupulousness which it gives me great pleasure to place on record, as I knew both the winner of the prize and the seller of the ticket.

This reminds me of another financial transaction, of a very different character, which, though much cleverer, was less creditable. A certain young man of my acquaintance had run through two inherited fortunes, and, like the beggar in Scripture, he could not dig, and to beg he was ashamed. He therefore bethought him of marrying a certain wealthy heiress, and had recourse to the following stratagem to obtain the confidence of her father. From an exceedingly obliging friend he first borrowed a sum of money equal to about £3,000 in English coin. This sum he took to the young lady's father, a wealthy merchant and shrewd man of business, asking him to be so kind as to take charge of it for him. I may remark here that this happened more than thirty years ago, when banks (in Brazil, at all events) were few and far between, and it was consequently not unusual to deal in this manner with spare cash. The merchant offered to pay interest on the sum. "Oh, no," said the would-be suitor to his daughter's hand, "I do not want any interest on it; I merely want to place it in safe keeping." As a result of this he very soon became intimate at the old man's house, and, not being devoid of charm of a certain kind, he successfully laid siege

to the young lady's heart and married her, where-upon he returned the £3,000 lent to him by his friend.

* * * * *

Politics are a positive passion with Brazilians, and political party feeling often runs very high and extends to whole families, preventing friendly intercourse of the members thereof if the chiefs are of different parties, and this even permeates down to the children at school. I even know a small town¹ where there are, or were some years ago, a Conservative cemetery, a Liberal cemetery, and one belonging to the Municipality. This I can vouch for as a positive fact, having seen them myself.

Being keen politicians they are not unnaturally great at public speaking and are very fond of the declamatory art. They are very fluent, as a rule, and many of them possess great eloquence, chiefly of the emotional order, reminding one sometimes of the words of R. L. Stevenson: "It is one of the worst things of sentiment that the voice grows to be more important than the words, and the speaker than that which is spoken."²

Like the ancient Romans, they are exceedingly fond of funeral orations, and the death of any notable person is the signal for all the local rhetoricians to foregather at his graveside, and pronounce a panegyric on the virtues of the departed.

I remember on one occasion when visiting a small town³ in the State of Rio Grande do Sul hearing the following incident. A gentleman was seriously

¹ Herval, in the State of Rio Grande do Sul.

² *The Master of Ballantrae*. Robert Louis Stevenson.

³ Itaqui on the Argentine frontier.

ill and not expected to live the night through, and on the afternoon of the next day, on hearing the tolling of the passing bell, a young fellow who was rather fond of giving a public display of his oratorical powers, hurried to the cemetery, suitably attired, arriving just in time to pay a last tribute to the excellent qualities of the deceased. His eloquence was prematurely arrested by the looks of surprise and consternation of all present, for the funeral then taking place was that of a lady! How our budding Mark Anthony felt when he became aware of his terrible *gaffe* I was not told, and perhaps it is best left to the imagination after all.

Beside a fluent and very often picturesque tongue, Brazilians have also a ready pen, and are really remarkable journalists. I think I may say that there is not a town in the country that does not support at least a weekly paper, often two or even three, or perhaps, if it is a town of any pretensions, it will have two dailies and one weekly, the dailies being of opposite parties, and the weekly non-political.

Where there are two papers of different party colours there is, of course, much rivalry between them, and the most trivial matter may sometimes lead to a heated discussion on both sides which soon degenerates into a quarrel, and then *crescit eundo*, or, in homely English, *it grows as it goes*. Each side vies with the other in the quantity and extraordinary quality of the invectives which it can bring to bear upon the subject. The columns of the paper fairly bristle with them, one can almost see them hurtling through the air. The excitement

becomes general, if the two contending parties are well known, and every one rushes to buy the paper directly it comes out to see what is the latest charge that A has brought against B, or what new depths of iniquity B has brought to light concerning A, as the case may be.

Politics and partisanship apart, one may often read articles in the papers upon matters of public interest, in which the subject is treated well and fairly on its own merits.

It is by no means an unknown occurrence, especially in the smaller towns, if a paper should publish what, to some parties, may be an unpalatable truth, for the office to be broken into, in the very early hours of the morning, and subjected to a process called there *empastellamento*, which signifies smashing the printing machines and destroying the type. This, I suppose, might be termed lynch law for imaginary libel.

The telegraph, which considering the extent of the country is fairly well diffused over it, is used by the press at greatly reduced rates, and one may read the result of the Inter-'Varsity Boat Race, or the Derby, or the latest exploit in aerial navigation, just as soon as here.

The leading paper in Brazil, I need hardly say, is the *Jornal do Commercio*, the oldest established of all, an extremely well edited paper of high standing. Then come *O Paiz* (The Country), the leading paper of the Republican Propaganda, I think, in the days of the Empire; the *Gazeta de Noticias* and the *Correio da Manhã* (Morning Post), and several others. The *Correio da Manhã* is a very

independent paper, and its editor, Sr. Edmundo Bittencourt, is a very outspoken man, in consequence of which he has already been challenged to fight two duels. As I have already had occasion to state,¹ duels were never heard of in the time of the Empire. The Republic decreed them illegal: now challenges are sent out and accepted.

There are likewise several magazines of the humorous type published in Rio de Janeiro, namely, the *Careta* (Grimace), the *Malho* (Sledge-hammer), and *Fon-Fon*—an imitation, I need hardly explain, of the hooting of a motor-horn.

It gives me pleasure to be able to state that the wit displayed by these papers is generally of the clean, wholesome kind that one need not mind seeing on one's drawing-room table.

¹ Chapter XII, page 133.



THE FAMOUS IRON-ORE PEAK OF ITABIRA DO CAMPO, STATE OF MINAS GERAES

From "Brazil in 1912."



RIO GRANDE DO SUL.

From "Brazil in 1912."

CHAPTER XXV

Other States besides Minas Geraes that are rich in minerals—Still extensive tracts of land unexplored in Brazil—Interior never yet fully surveyed—Only accurate maps of the coast and part of the interior—Greater part of territory consists of highlands—Mean elevation of highlands—No very high mountains—Strip of lowland along Atlantic coast—One of the great natural advantages is the possession of many rivers—The Amazon the foremost—Called Solimões too—Principal affluents—Lowland areas subject to annual flooding—The home of the rubber-tree—Vast forests of these trees—Carelessness in collecting the gum—The São Francisco—The Paulo Affonso Falls—Comparison with Niagara Falls—Other great rivers and waterfalls—Important topographical feature—A waterway from the Amazon to the River Plate—Ceará the least favoured as it is subject to droughts—The flora of the Amazon valley—The Carnahuba—Great lack of enterprise all over the country—And especially of initiative—Plea put forward—High taxation—Taxes of a threefold character—Average minimum return of any well managed enterprise—Brazil offers a fairer field to explorers than the Arctic or Antarctic regions—Brazil bound to become a great nation—What it most lacks is population—Her prosperity should be great.

ALTHOUGH Minas Geraes is the principal State for mining, there are others, perhaps equally rich, where minerals are known to exist, but their possibilities are as yet quite undeveloped. Some of them may be even richer. There are still extensive tracts of land in this, by Nature, highly-favoured country that are unknown to civilized

man : notably in Matto Grosso, Goyaz and part of Amazonas.

The interior of this enormous country, which comprises more than 3,200,000 square miles,¹ has never yet been fully surveyed. Indeed, it is only of the coast and a comparatively small part of the interior that there are accurate maps. The coast-line is nearly 5,000 miles.

The greater part of the territory consists of highlands, and these vary in elevation, being seldom less than 1,000 feet, and frequently rising to 2,500, 3,000 and even more.

Above the general level rise numerous mountain peaks and ridges, for the most part of a height about 5,000 feet to 6,500 feet above the level of the sea. The mean elevation of the interior highlands probably does not exceed 3,000 feet.

There are no very high mountains in Brazil. The highest peak is that of Itatiaia in the Mantiqueira Range, the altitude of which is given at 9,283 feet.

Along the Atlantic coastline there is a strip of lowland, although it is nowhere of any great width, and sometimes it is non-existent. There is a broad lowland area in the valley of the lower Amazon.

One of the great natural advantages of this richly-endowed land is the possession of many rivers, foremost amongst them being, of course, the mighty Amazon, best known by this name, although the main stream, rising in the Peruvian Andes, has

¹ With the territory of Acre lately ceded by Bolivia to Brazil the area is computed to be 3,291,416 square miles.

various names. In Brazil the Upper Amazon is usually designated by the name of Solimões. The principal affluents of this river are, on the right bank the Juruá, Purús, Madeira, Tapajoz and Xingú; on the left bank, the Japurá and Rio Negro, all of them important rivers which are, of course, fed in their turn by many minor streams forming a marvellous network of waterways.

The lowland areas of the Amazon basin are subject to annual flooding, which converts them during a part of the year into lakes and swamps, some of them remaining permanently so, whilst others regain their condition of dry land for a period of a few months.

It is in the forests of these flooded lowlands of the Amazon valley that the home of the rubber-tree lies, although it is found in several other States too, notably in Pará, which latter gives its name to most of the rubber sent from the Amazon valley to Europe and North America, from the fact that it is sent to Belem, the capital city of that State, there to be shipped to its destination.

There are vast forests of trees affording rubber, of which there are several varieties, the best kind of rubber being called *Seringa*, whilst the tree and the plantation are called respectively *Seringueira* and *Seringal* (plural *seringaes*).

Much carelessness has prevailed hitherto in the collection of this valuable gum, probably induced in some measure by the great abundance with which it grows.

The trees grow to a great height, sometimes attaining to nearly a hundred feet with a diameter

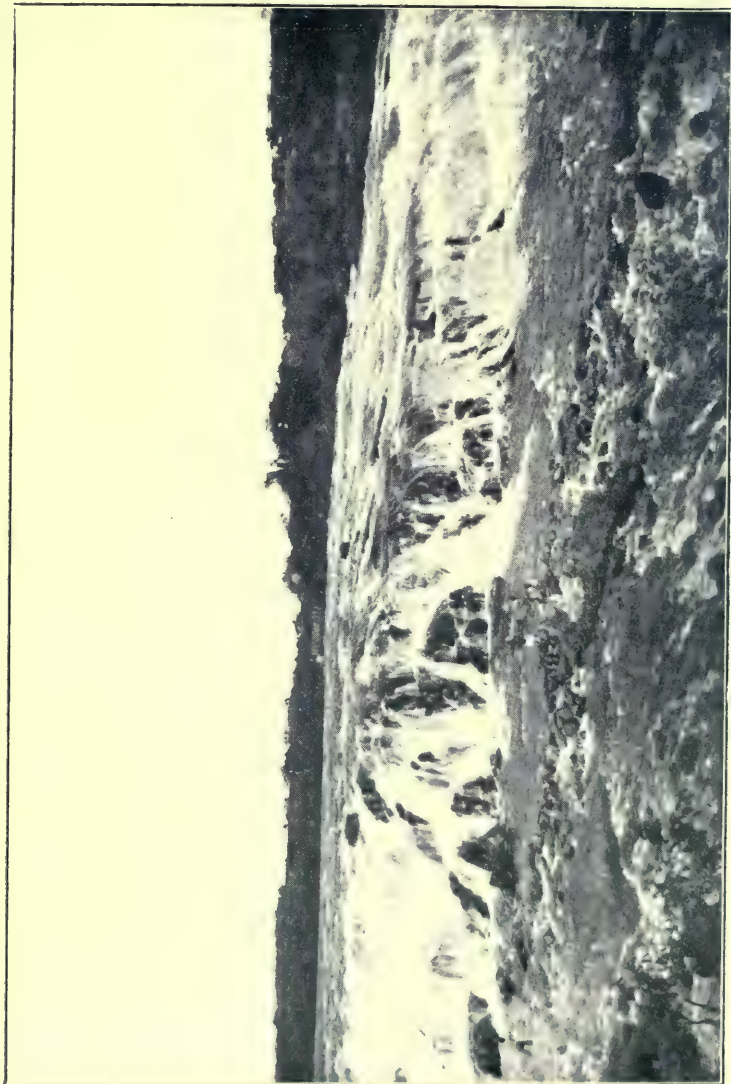
of over three feet, although many do not measure half as much.

The method of obtaining the gum is as follows : A man goes round early in the morning and, with a suitable knife, makes an incision in the bark into which he inserts the lip or spout of a small basin to receive the fluid as it exudes from the tree. The incisions are made about five or six inches apart round the trunk, and at a height of five feet more or less from the ground. After a sufficient time has elapsed for the vessels to fill they are removed, and their contents are poured into a pail which is carried round for this purpose. After all the gum is collected a fire is made and the liquid, placed in a mould, is subjected to the smoke which comes from it. This is done to condense it. After removing the cups the incisions previously made in the bark of the trees should be stopped up. This, however, is frequently not done, for, as I have already mentioned, gross carelessness has been the general rule in dealing with this useful product.

In Manáos the local taxes are very heavy, and at Pará the export duty may amount to as much as 25 per cent., according to the quality of the rubber. This is an instance of how commerce is handicapped and hindered by short-sighted legislation.

Another great river which I must not forget to mention is the São Francisco, which, rising in Minas Geraes, passes completely through Bahia, from south to north-east, where it forms part of the southern boundary of Pernambuco, and then inclining its course to the south-east, it divides the States of Sergipe and Alagoas, and finally falls into





PIRACICABA FALLS, S. PAULO.

From "Brazil in 1912."

the Atlantic. It is just as the river approaches these last mentioned States that the waters take the great leap forming the superb Falls of Paulo Affonso. It has never been my good fortune to see this magnificent cataract, but I have heard and read a great deal about it, and in one account I remember reading of a sheer leap of about 500 feet. The actual height is, I believe, about 80 metres (262 feet). There are minor falls above, which together with the great one might make a difference of 500 feet between the higher and lower levels. There is a legend about an Indian coming down these falls in a canoe.

There is no doubt that the water of the Paulo Affonso falls from a much greater height than at Niagara, although the volume of water is not, I believe, so great. I have heard from those who have seen both, that the Paulo Affonso bears the palm for general beauty and charm to the beholder, especially when seen in the sunshine, or by moonlight.

Besides the rivers already mentioned there are, in the north of Brazil, the Tocantins and the Araguaia, which joins it before they both unite with the Amazon, whilst in the south we find the Paraná river with its splendid falls at Guayra, known by the name of *Sete Quedas* (Seven Falls), said by some explorers to be the grandest on earth. They come from a height of more than 300 feet. Some distance lower down this river is joined by the Iguassú, and just above the junction of the two are the very fine falls bearing the name of the latter river. The mist rising from them can be seen for many miles around.

One important topographical feature yet to be mentioned is, that some of these rivers have their source in the central plateau of Matto Grosso or Goyaz, and that, with the trifling exception of a very short distance of about two leagues, there is a waterway from the Amazon to the River Plate coming from north to south through the very centre of a great portion of South America.

The Arinos, which flowing north feeds the Tapajoz (a great affluent of the Amazon), has its rise in Matto Grosso, whilst the great Paraguay river, which afterwards unites with the Paraná, also has its source quite near.

Besides the three great cataracts already mentioned, there are many others of lesser degree. Indeed, there is hardly a State in the whole Union that is not generously supplied with waterfalls. Some few have already been utilized, but there is still a tremendous amount of latent power waiting to be converted into productive energy well distributed over the country.

The least favoured portion, hydrographically speaking, is the north-eastern corner, formed by Ceará, Rio Grande do Norte and Parahyba. The first-named of these is especially subject to droughts, which calamity is a great drawback to an otherwise fertile region.

In the valley of the Amazon lies the world's great timber reserve, whilst its flora is the despair of botanists, for although 22,000 exclusive species have been already classified, no one can yet even hazard a guess as to what the total may be.

"In the virgin forests," says Mr. Kean, "as many

as 120 species have been already discovered of distinct economic value, alimentary, medicinal, rubber-giving, useful for cabinet work, weaving, netting, plaiting and other practical purposes. In that no land can compare with Brazil, just as no other tree in the world can compare with the Brazilian Wax-palm, the *Carnahuba* of the natives, which seems to concentrate in itself half the purports of the vegetable kingdom. It resists intense droughts and is always green and vigorous. Its roots produce the same medicinal effects as salsaparilla ; its trunk affords strong, light fibres and acquires a beautiful lustre and serves for building purposes. From other parts of the tree wine and vinegar, and a saccharine substance and starch, resembling sago, are prepared. Its fruit is used for feeding cattle ; its pulp has an agreeable taste, and the nut is used sometimes as a substitute for coffee. Of the wood, musical instruments, water tubes and pumps are made ; the pith is an excellent substitute for cork ; from the stem a white liquid flows similar to the milk of the cocoanut, and a flour like maizena is prepared. Of the straw, hats, baskets, brooms and mats are made. Salt is extracted from it and an alkali for making soap, but the most valuable of its products is the Carnahuba wax of commerce obtained from its leaves."

In spite of the enormous and varied natural resources, however, there is a great lack of enterprise and more especially of initiative amongst the people all over the country. I say especially of initiative, for they will often join in and co-operate readily and efficiently in almost any kind of enter-

prise, provided it be initiated by foreigners. In personal enterprise, or, I may say, in national enterprise, both individually and collectively, they are lacking to a degree that is much to be deplored when one considers the possibilities which their country offers, for I doubt whether there be any land in the whole world offering a wider and fairer field, or possessing such varied and valuable elements for man to develop by his enterprise and industry.

Of course, the plea put forward in defence of, or excuse for, this lack of enterprise is the high taxation, which is generally of a threefold character, namely, Federal, State and Municipal, and I am inclined to think myself sometimes that it is this that acts as a deterrent. But when it is remembered that any kind of enterprise (properly organized and efficiently managed, of course) yields a minimum return of 15 per cent. at once on the capital employed, and that it is not unusual for capital to be doubled and trebled in a very short space of time, it will be seen that there is still a margin for very profitable speculation.

With all the known natural gifts which this country possesses, and the fair possibility of others still to be found, I think the regions as yet untrodden by the white man in Brazil offer a far fairer field for the explorer than either the Arctic or Antarctic regions possibly can, without entailing the hardship, suffering and sacrifice of life which have been the lot of those who have tried to penetrate the ice-bound fastnesses of either Pole. Much greater advantages may reasonably be expected to accrue therefrom both to the individual and to mankind

in general, and the prospect is attractive in the one where in the other it is repellent ; alluring in the one where in the other it is forbidding and sombre.

Brazil, possessing as it does so many and such great advantages, is bound to become a great nation. The only thing she is deficient in is the number of her population. With arms for the work waiting to be done, and intelligence and energy for the carrying out of the manifold enterprises that are still in the making, her prosperity may well be great.

Printed by
BUTLER & TANNER,
Frome and London.



149279

HSA^m.
B 4714f

Author Bennett, Frank

Title Forty years in Brazil.

University of Toronto
Library

DO NOT
REMOVE
THE
CARD
FROM
THIS
POCKET

Acme Library Card Pocket
Under Pat. "Ref. Index File"
Made by LIBRARY BUREAU

ref

